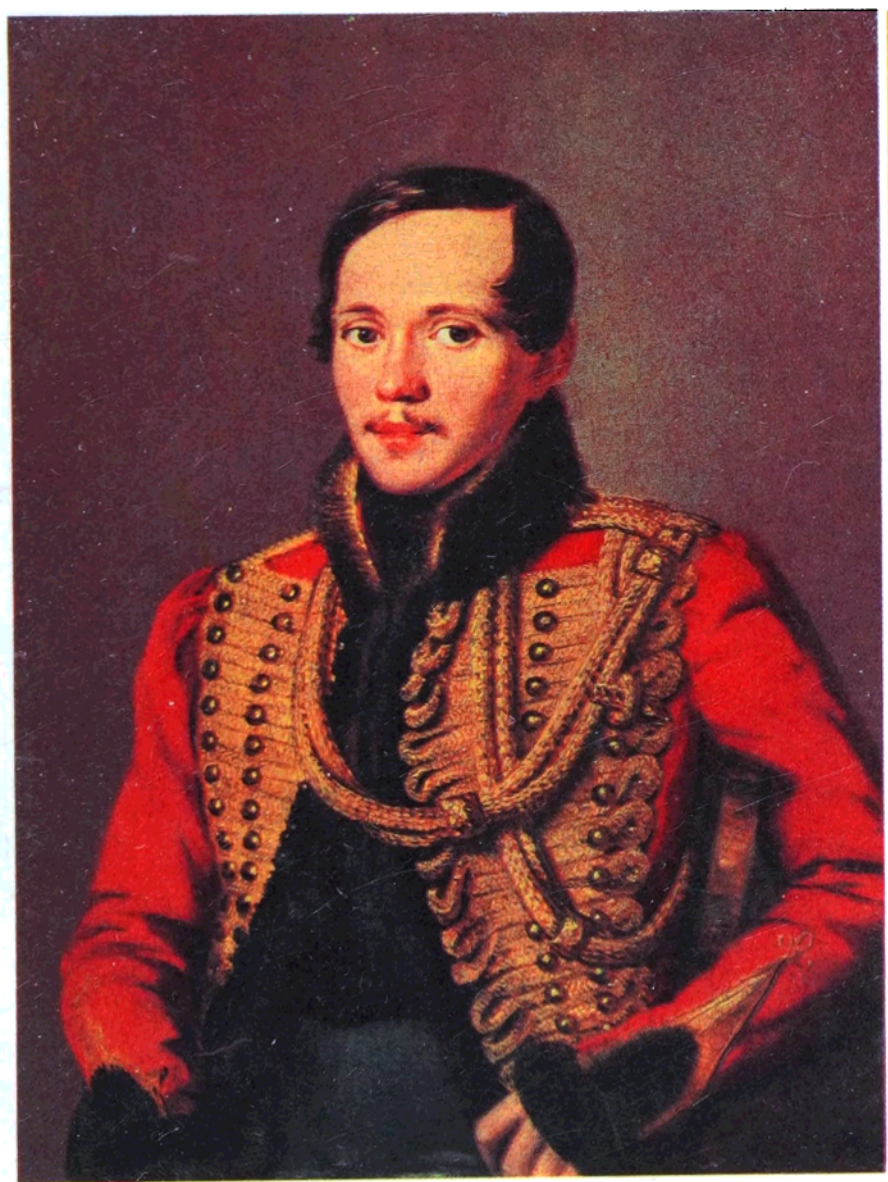


PROGRESS • RUSSIAN CLASSICS SERIES



MIKHAIL LERMONTOV

Selected Works



*Progress
Publishers*



PROGRESS • RUSSIAN CLASSICS SERIES





• Mikhail Lermontov. Self-portrait. Watercolour. 1837. Until 1962 the portrait was kept in a private collection and was known only from copies.

MIKHAIL LERMONTOV

Selected Works



PROGRESS PUBLISHERS
MOSCOW

Translated from the Russian

Михаил Лермонтов
ИЗБРАННОЕ

На английском языке

© Translation into English: Poetry;
"A Panorama of Moscow", "Asheck-Kerib".
Progress Publishers 1976. Illustrated

First printing 1976

Second printing 1978

CONTENTS

Foreword.	<i>Page</i>
MIKHAIL LERMONTOV by S. Narovchatov. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	7

POEMS

Ballad. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	21
The Angel. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	22
"The Chains of Mountains Blue I Love..." <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	23
To*** <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	24
"Not Byron—of a Different Kind..." <i>Translated</i> <i>by Avril Pyman</i>	25
The Sail. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	26
The Reed. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	26
The Mermaid. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	28
On the Death of the Poet. <i>Translated by Avril</i> <i>Pyman</i>	29
The Captive. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	32
"When Comes a Gentle Breeze..." <i>Translated</i> <i>by Irina Zheleznova</i>	32
"Though We Have Parted, on My Breast..." <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	33
"Pray, Laugh Not at a Gloom of Dark Forebod- ing Born..." <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	33
Meditation. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	34
The Poet. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	35
A Cossack Lullaby. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	37
Three Palms. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	39

"How Frequently Amidst the Many-Coloured Crowd..." <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i> . . .	41
Such Emptiness, Heartache. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	42
Because. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	43
To a Child. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i> . .	43
Clouds. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	44
My Native Land. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	45
The Dream. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i> . .	46
"No, Not on You My Passion's Bent..." <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	47
"Lone's the Mist-Cloaked Road Before Me Lying..." <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i> . .	47
The Sea Princess. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	48
The Cross Atop a Cliff. <i>Translated by Irina Zhe- leznova</i>	50

LONG POEMS

The Lay of Tsar Ivan Vassilyevich, His Young Oprichnik and the Stouthearted Merchant Ka- lashnikov. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i> . .	53
Mtsyri. <i>Translated by Irina Zheleznova</i>	60
The Demon. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i> . . .	91

PROSE

A Panorama of Moscow. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i>	127
Asheek-Kerib. <i>Translated by Avril Pyman</i> . . .	133
A Hero of Our Time. <i>Translated by Martin Parker</i>	143

Part I

I. Bella	144
II. Maxim Maximych	184
Pechorin's Diary	194
I. Taman	195

Part II

II. Princess Mary	208
III. The Fatalist	291

*MIKHAIL LERMONTOU**

In Russian poetry there are two names which are usually spoken one after the other: Pushkin and Lermontov. They follow one upon the other like "beginning" and "development", "seed-time" and "harvest". Our great-grandfathers, however, when they coupled and compared these names, likened them to the sun and the moon. In these old-fashioned symbols there is a remarkable degree of true insight. The light of the moon is not only reflected but transformed sunlight. One cannot see Lermontov without Pushkin, he is his heir and successor, but Lermontov's works is precious in itself, original and unrepeatable; it marks a new step in the artistic development of Russia.

Let us try to throw some light on the common factor, the connecting link between these two great names. Only fifteen years divide Pushkin, born in 1799, from Lermontov, born in 1814. Between brothers who grow up in the same family a greater age gap is possible. Here, however, fifteen years stood not so much for a difference in age as in epoch and indicated a difference not in the fate of individuals but of generations.

Pushkin's formative years as a poet, a man and a cultural phenomenon were years in which Russia awakened to sudden consciousness of her national greatness. Resistance to the Napoleonic invasion, the successful withstanding and the ensuing ejection of French troops from Russia united all Russians in the inspiring drive to defend their country. For it was not for nothing that

* © Издательство «Прогресс», 1976

the war of 1812 was called The Patriotic War. The victorious outcome, when the Russian army, the burning of Moscow fresh in its memory, went into winter quarters in Paris, revived a number of long cherished hopes. The growing self-awareness of the people, tempered by the clash with danger from without, began to demand decisive changes in the internal organisation of Russian society. Russia was a serf state ruled by an autocrat. In rebellious minds, the emancipation of the serfs was linked with the overthrow of the autocracy. Both these aims filled the brief, fine word "freedom" with a very real, practical content, and the word was on the lips of the progressive people of the day. Pushkin became the poet of freedom and his art became imbued with and developed the dreams and hopes of its boldest advocates. These hopes found political expression in the unsuccessful rising of December 14, 1825. Those who took part in the rising were called after the date: the Decembrists. The new tsar, Nicholas I, who succeeded to the throne after the sudden death of his brother Alexander, used cannons to quell the rebellious regiments, hanged five leaders of the rebellion and had the rest sent to prison or to Siberian mines. The main reason for the failure of the Decembrists was their inability to establish contact with the people. They had acted in their name, but not with their cooperation. The disinterested impulse of these young noblemen turned out to be not only admirable and courageous, but tragic because of this isolation.

The freedom-loving movement was broader than the actual plot, and Pushkin, who was not officially accounted one of the plotters, was in fact the singer and inspirer of the movement as a whole. His poetry was imbued not only with the thought but with the Decembrists' perception of life. And this perception was lucid and joyous, just as the dreams of these youthful knights of freedom were dreams of light and joy. It was as sparkling and heady as the wine in the glasses of the gallant plotters as they drank success to their righteous cause. It was youthful and active, like their desires, and the splendid sound of the words "freedom", "glory" and "love" rang through them all.

Such was Pushkin's state of mind at the time when Lermontov, still a young boy, was learning the great poet's verse by heart. Lermontov's philosophy of life, however, was formed under the influence of other planets, and his attitude toward life was coloured with very different feelings and impressions than was Pushkin's. The reason for this was not only his own sharply-defined personality, but the equally sharp change of times. "The first years which followed immediately after 1825 were terrible," wrote Lermontov's

contemporary, the revolutionary democrat Herzen. "It took not less than ten years for a man to recover from the sad awareness that he was, after all, an enslaved and persecuted being. The prevailing mood was one of profound despair and general despondency. Higher society, with contemptible and unworthy zeal, hastened to suppress all human feelings, all humane thoughts. There was scarcely one aristocratic family that did not have some relative among the exiled but there were hardly any who dared to wear mourning or to show their sorrow in any other way. When they sought a valid alternative to this sad vision of servility, when they allowed themselves to think, delving deeper in the attempt to find some sign or hope, then they were brought up face to face with terrible, heart-chilling thoughts."

For Lermontov, the tragedy of public life became confounded with his own, private tragedy. The brief story of his life—he did not live a full 27 years—is packed with misfortunes enough to embitter a much longer span. Mikhail Yuryevich Lermontov was born in Moscow on the night of the 2/3 October, 1814, of a marriage between an heiress of rich estates and a poor army officer. A family drama was initiated over his very cradle, the results of which for the child were to be long-lasting and unpleasant. His mother died when he was only two years old, and the future poet was educated by a despotic grandmother. A strong personality herself, the grandmother adored the child but detested his father and would allow him no part in the upbringing of his own son. To this the father submitted as not to do so would have been to deprive his son of his grandmother's inheritance. The child became the plaything of grown-up passions and his earliest days were darkened by family disputes. Sorrowful echoes of this drama sound in Lermontov's poetry, and in his early play *People and Passions* he puts into his hero's mouth a speech which was a bitter delineation of his own position between the people he loved: "Here I am like some spoil rent in twain between two conquerors, both of whom wish to possess it whole."

From childhood he was oppressed by unforgettable impressions of serfdom. Thousands of aristocrats' children, brought up in analogous conditions, took such scenes for granted and accepted them as part of the order of things, once and for all established. And in this mind they grew from childhood to youth and to maturity—only to become serf-owners in their turn, like their fathers. But Lermontov was branded with the mark of a different fate and where his contemporaries saw happiness he perceived misery. Intuitively comprehended, the contradictions between wealth and

poverty, between despotic power on the one hand and complete lack of rights on the other wounded his heart even in childhood. He grew up in a "land of slaves, and a land of masters."

In the meantime he was brought up to be a little ruling prince and his every wish was deferred to, except his desire to see something of his rejected father. But even this illusory freedom to indulge his every whim, attained at the expense of the serfdom of hundreds of people, the source of his despotic grandmother's wealth, soon came to an end. Beyond the walls of his home a cruel, ruthless world awaited the adolescent, a world ready to curb and crush every wish and inclination that was in any way opposed to its own set of rules. Very considerable strength of mind and inner firmness must have been needed not to bow before the inevitable but to stand out victorious in the struggle against circumstance. "It was necessary," once again, in the words of Herzen, "to know how to hate out of love, to despise out of feelings of humanity, to be possessed of unlimited pride in order to hold one's head high when one's wrists and ankles were fettered in irons."

Lermontov did hold his head high in this hostile world—until that world killed him by placing the deadly weapon in the hands of his assassin. But this was not to happen for another fifteen years or so, and in the meantime the adolescent grew to be a youth, the youth to a mature man. The pattern of his life in those years was simple enough. At the age of fourteen he entered a boarding school for the sons of noble families attached to Moscow University where two years later he became a student. In 1832, Lermontov left the university and transferred to an officer's school, choosing to enter military service as was usual for young men of his milieu. The School of Ensigns of the Guard and Cavalry Cadets (such was its official designation) was situated in Petersburg, and it was in his years there that Lermontov began to move amongst the high society of the imperial capital, that high society which he so abhorred and which, in return, was to declare war on him, war to the death.

In 1834, at the age of twenty, Lermontov graduated from the military school with the lowest officer's rank of cornet and was seconded to a Hussar Regiment of the Imperial Guards.

Such was the exterior, unexpressive aspect of his life at that time, which tells us virtually nothing of his inner life, seething with passions, thoughts, doubts and anxieties. During this time, the young man loved and suffered, lost and found, felt and thought. He poured out all the variety of his thoughts and feelings

in verse. For it is from these years that Lermontov's dedicated life in poetry really stems.

Lermontov's first attempts at poetry date to 1828 and, by 1832, he was already the author of two hundred lyric poems, ten long poems and three plays. This was a genuine boiling over of creative vigour and in its youthful seething and bubbling we can already catch hints of the future power of his mature poetry. We can indeed, for among dozens of imperfect, prentice verses to come from Lermontov's hands in these years we every now and again encounter a real masterpiece such as *The Sail* or *The Mermaid*.

From a very early age, Lermontov thought of himself as a poet and could not imagine his future otherwise than in poetry. He even imbued his stern and eminently practical grandmother with this thought—such was the power of his conviction. His student's and later his officer-cadet's and officer's uniforms were to him merely the outward form of his connection with the official order; his inner ties with society were formed in spite of university and regiment—through poetry. His first attempts at verse were distinguished by an immediate desire to tread the hard path. In those years when thought seldom reached out beyond the limits of the visible world, the youth set himself historical and philosophical questions, trying boldly for solution. He received a brilliant education for his time, having been taught at home by tutors and later at the university and at a military school, but he differed from many of his contemporaries in that this learning did not remain a dead letter for him but was quickly absorbed and went to nourish his poetry. Sensitivity is the starting point of every talent, but Lermontov was master of his sensitivity, able to select impressions and endowed by nature with the gift of distinguishing the important from the secondary, the permanent from the fortuitous. By the time he was eighteen years old he already had a vast and serious experience of poetic work.

The officer's school and service in the Hussars did not estrange the young poet from his vocation. These years gave him a rich store of observation on which to draw, and much food for thought on the mores of society. His creative horizons broadened and, without abandoning poetry, he now turned also to prose and drama: stories such as *Uadim* and *Princess Ligovskaya* and the dramatic masterpiece *Masquerade* were written at this time.

There was, however, one moment in Lermontov's brief life the importance of which it is impossible to overestimate. We do not know how his way through life would have been laid had it not

been for the terrible pistol shot which echoed through all Russia and still brings a sharp stab of pain to every Russian heart. In the year 1837, Russia's greatest poet, Alexander Pushkin, was killed in a duel. Pushkin's death was not merely the tragedy of an artist who perished in an unequal struggle against those forces in court society which would give him no peace, it was not only the tragedy of a literature suddenly deprived of its leader; it was the tragedy of a nation, of a whole people. With Pushkin's death, it seemed, the last hopes of those who loved freedom died too. The deadly shot which laid low the poet recalled the volleys of the tsarist troops which had proved mortal to liberty in the suppression of the Decembrist rising. With Pushkin's death autocracy triumphed over freedom, serfdom over the people, reaction over progress, darkness over light. But this triumph was brief.

The bright torch which fell from the hand of the great poet of freedom was snatched up at once by another, little known poet. Shattered by Pushkin's death, Lermontov wrote a poem on the occasion, a poem which rang out like an answering shot not aimed at the murderer alone, but at those who had condoned or directed his action. The poem provoked an enthusiastic reaction amongst the enlightened society of the time. It was copied and recopied, passed from hand to hand, from mouth to mouth. The name of Lermontov which up till this time had been known only in the narrow circle of the poet's friends, became famous and men repeated it with hope and gratitude in all corners of Russia. This reaction was profoundly disturbing to Nicholas I; the flame which had just been trampled out by the jack-boots of autocracy flared up again with burning intensity. Lermontov, for composing "impermissible" verse, was transferred from his Hussar Regiment in St. Petersburg to active service in the Caucasus. This was the poet's first exile.

From the day when his name thus became linked with the memory of Pushkin, Lermontov's poetic star rose quickly. He had roughly four and a half years to live. In this desperately short time he managed to write his greatest works.

Lermontov himself, however, had been aware of his own inborn powers before Pushkin's death. All that had been needed was some great moral shock to call them into life. Now this shock had come.

With it came a new feeling. Lermontov had not known Pushkin personally, but the very awareness that the great poet was living, thinking and working in the same society had freed him from

many doubts and anxieties. Men had looked to Pushkin for an answer to the most painful questions of life, his verses had been the guiding lights of society.... Now Pushkin was no more. Lermontov felt that, whether he would or no, a great burden had been laid on his shoulders. From this moment he had no right to be idle, no right to keep silent. Even had this not been so, the verses came thick and fast, it was as though the poet's heart had been flung wide open. And if, until 1837, Lermontov had ranked as first-class poet of considerable talent, after Pushkin's death he showed himself to be a great poet, a poet of genius.

His exile to the Caucasus where he came to know the life of the ordinary soldiers and of the mountain folk brought him sharply up against reality. Having escaped the moribund atmosphere of high society he perceived how little the life of the people had in common with the conceptions of that life then current in the drawing-rooms of St. Petersburg. He absorbed the poetry of this life and felt himself at one with it. His work gained in humanity and this has become, in our eyes, an inalienable part of his genius.

Lermontov now looked upon himself as the representative of a whole generation doomed to live in a period of stagnation, and this constrained him to seek some more general significance in his contemporaries' bitter and tragic fate. From the lofty sentiments of romanticism which he was to delineate with such irony in the poem *And I, Too, Loved in Days Gone By*, from the outward tempests of nature and the inmost tempests of the passions, Lermontov now passed on to quite different creative principles which had their foundation in a realistic and sober assessment of the historical process. It was according to these new principles that he selected the poems to be included in the first and only collection of his verse published during his lifetime which came out in 1840. In that same year his *A Hero of Our Time*—one of the great masterpieces of Russian prose—was published, and this immediately established Lermontov on the highest level both as an artist and as an observant chronicler of the ways and manners of contemporary society.

In those years the poet's life was a stormy one and rich in events and impressions. Thanks to the endeavours of his influential grandmother, he was permitted to return to Petersburg, but not long after he was provoked to call out the son of the French Ambassador and this provided an excuse for a second arrest and exile. An excuse and no more, for the duel was a deliberate provocation and came to nothing. For Nicholas I, however, Lermontov was a

dangerous man better kept away from the capital. This time he was transferred to an infantry regiment almost permanently engaged on active service in the Caucasus. Lermontov immediately gained a reputation for reckless courage in the eyes of his fellow officers, but, in the Tsar's eyes, he remained a rebellious free-thinker who was in no case to be encouraged by promotion, decorations or leave.

Impressions of military service were sharply and powerfully reflected in Lermontov's poetry. In his poem *Valerik*, after giving an unforgettable picture of a battle in which he had taken part, the poet writes:

"And with a secret, heartfelt sadness
I thought: 'How pitiable is man,
What does he lack! . . . Clear shines the sky,
Beneath the sky there's room to spare for
All men. And yet unceasingly
He wages fruitless war—why? Wherefore?' "

The great, eternal question Lermontov puts here contains more than a condemnation of war—it is a condemnation of all enmity among men. If we understand it in its widest implications, and this is the only way to understand it, we shall see how far-reaching is the poet's thought. Tolstoy's *War and Peace* stemmed from these words and it was not fortuitous that when he spoke of this question of Lermontov's he claimed that the whole 19th century had failed to solve it. The power of this "wherefore?" passed into Russian literature as a whole, into Russian thought. And if we speak of the Lermontov heritage alongside the Pushkin heritage in Russian literature, it lies precisely in this great "wherefore?"

Valerik is a remarkable poem, but it is but one in a whole cycle of magnificent works written by Lermontov over these years. He completed and rewrote *Mtsyri* and *The Demon*, both begun almost in boyhood, finished *The Lay of the Merchant Kaláshnikov* . . . , and wrote a quantity of exquisite lyric verse which has passed into the classic tradition of Russian literature. Motifs of denunciation ring through his verse with renewed force. The immortal *Meditation* and *How Frequently Amidst the Many-Coloured Crowd* . . . re-echoed through Russia like resounding slaps in the face dealt by the poet to the society and governmental system of Nicholas's Russia. On a brief visit to Petersburg and Moscow, Lermontov managed to arrange for the publication of his latest works, which assured him the first place in Russian poetry. But he was again posted back

to the Caucasus, and now he was caught between two clashing waves of emotion. His hopes of retiring from military service, of devoting himself to literature, writing new works and editing and publishing a literary magazine were brought up sharp against the sober sadness of a man condemned to die. For his death really was desired and schemed for by those who occupied positions of authority in autocratic Russia. He was constantly being dispatched to the most dangerous parts of the Caucasian front, but against the bullets of the mountain dwellers he seemed to bear a charmed life; then an evil intrigue was set afoot, employing as its tool an unimaginative man of no spiritual stature, whose unenviable destiny it was to murder the new hope of Russian poetry in a duel. Like Pushkin's, Lermontov's death in a private quarrel was in fact the work of a regime totally ruthless in its methods of silencing its critics. On a tragic day in July 1841, Lermontov fell to the stony ground with a bullet in his heart. He was not quite twenty-seven.

The remarkably short life-span and the exceptional scope of achievement—this is the first thing to strike one when one thinks of Lermontov. Much, indeed, had been done, fantastically much! Poetry, prose, drama—he had made his mark in them all—and what a mark! Not only does the Russian reader put Lermontov next to or on a par with Pushkin, but there are many who hold him in a special, almost personal affection. One often hears: "I love Pushkin, but I feel Lermontov is somehow closer."

The poignant charm of Lermontov's poetry is hard to convey in the language of precise definition and formula. It is the young who respond most immediately to the rebellious romanticism of his poetry. The lines from *The Sail*:

"The blue waves dance, they dance and tremble,
The sun's bright rays caress the seas.
And yet for storm it begs, the rebel,
As if in storm lurked calm and peace! . . ."

might well serve as the device either of a lone rebel or of a whole generation of revolutionaries or, equally, they can simply stir up the young heart's thirst for the unknown, for those voyages of discovery in search for a meaning and a goal that are so compelling an attraction for all the young. The meaning behind *The Sail* is vast and manifold and every new generation of young people takes from it what most answers to their own aspirations.

The narrative poem *Mtsyri* is equally rich in meaning. The young novice who runs away from the monastery on the eve of taking his final vows and lives three days of perfect freedom, speaks in his deathbed confession of his quiet life within the enclosing walls of the monastery:

"A captive's life has my life been
And brief. . . . Two such lives, calm if mean,
Would I exchange, if but I could,
For one, of risk, disquietude
And peril full. . . . As I recall,
One passion held me e'er in thrall;
It worm-like gnawed at me at first,
Then into flames devouring burst
And all of me consumed. . . . From prayer
And stifling cell to regions fair
Borne by my dreams was I, of strife
A wondrous world, where soaring cliff
Is hid by cloud, and men are free
As eagles. . . ."*

Contemporaries saw *Mtsyri* as a protest against the order of things under Nicholas I, when free will was confined as it were by iron bands. Undoubtedly, this was indeed the social and moral background of the poem. Yet those circumstances which gave rise to the poem in the first place have long since faded into the past together with Tsar Nicholas and his regime, and in spite of this it continues to touch and stir the heart. The rebellion of feeling and reason against any form of limited, prejudiced existence in the name of the great purposes of a world "of strife" and a life "of disquietude and peril":—this is what later generations of young people have perceived in this poem.

The rebellious romantic wave in Lermontov's poetry blends with the angry wave of denunciation on whose crest were borne such verses as *On the Death of the Poet*, and *Meditation*. Lermontov heaped bitter accusations not only upon autocracy but upon his whole generation, to whom it was given to understand, but not to perform. A premature fruit starved of life-giving sap—that, in his opinion, what the people of this interlude of inaction most resembled. Lermontov dissects the vices of his age with the ruthlessness of a

* Translated by Irina Zheleznova.—Ed.

surgeon. Poems such as this, mercilessly stripping off the dressings from the sores and wounds of society, this cry raised by one man in the dumb night of circumstance, this cry of despair and anger—still, many years later, has the power to strike an answering chord in us. The tragic voice of a generation sounds in the poem *Such Emptiness, Heartache*. It is, as it were, a factual illustration of the moods suggested in *Meditation*. Before us a man arises from amongst the “dour crowd”, a man who lived in a time of reaction. The terrible spiritual isolation from his fellow men is the direct result of those circumstances in which he was placed. If, in *Meditation*, we are shown the general process of the sickness of a generation, here we see the same sickness at work in the individual. It amazes us by its sheer hopelessness, but at the same time it is an excellent gauge of how far the disease had progressed at that time.

Lermontov's constructive thought is more evident in his work in which he drew upon Russian history and folklore. In *The Lay of Tsar Ivan Uassilyevich, His Young Oprichnik and the Stouthearted Merchant Kalashnikov*, the poet raises the question of the dignity of man before the face of history, showing the moral dignity of the individual to be equal in significance to the power of the state absolute. In *Borodino* he depicts the heroism of the people in the Patriotic War of 1812, contrasting the heroes of that time with the people of his own days. “Unlike you those men were true heroes!” the old man who tells the story of the battle keeps repeating. In *My Native Land* Lermontov contrasts his own patriotism with the deadening official idea of the autocratic state. The mainspring of this patriotism is his awareness of the people as the moving force of history, of the life of the people as the basic content of history.

All-pervading in Lermontov's poetry is the lyrical note which is sounded, now sadly, now joyfully, now in anger, now with tenderness, in all his works. This it is that unites the love of an outcast spirit for an earthly woman in *The Demon* with the sorrowful self-accusation of *Meditation*, the sacred purity of *The Prayer* with the righteous wrath of *On the Death of the Poet*. This particular note sounds in his most masterly love lyrics and in his most profound analytic works such as *The Argument*. Lermontov is by rights accounted one of the world's greatest lyric poets. His work is remarkable for the direct way in which heart speaks to heart; we believe that his poetry will also speak directly to the heart of readers beyond the borders of our country and that they too will hear in it much that echoes and corresponds to their own moods and meditations, thoughts and hopes.

Sergei Narovchatov

POEMS

BALLAD

She sits so late, the Slavic maiden. . .
The rough log walls shut out the night
But, in the distance, red doom laden,
The sky glows with a crimson light. . .
She rocks the cradle all night long
And as she rocks she croons this song:

“Hush a bye, hush: or is it coming
Disaster frights your heart, my dear?
Cheer up, my babe, and leave your glooming;
Mother’s not going—anywhere!
I’d sooner loose my man than you,
My child, don’t cry! or I shall too!

“Your father fights for God and glory
Against the Tatars, in the ranks. . .
Brave soldier—rough his road and gory
But bright the steel in his right hand!
Look here, that red glow in the sky
Means battle—and that man must die.

“How glad I am your little head
Is still too small to grasp your danger,
For infants weep not for the dead;
Nor know the shame and helpless anger
Of chains. They’re happier than we older. . . .”
The door swings wide—a wounded soldier

Stands on the threshold, bloody-bearded,
His armour battered, crying "The end!
The end of all things! Gloat, accursed! . . .
Our dear-loved land her neck must bend
Beneath your yoke! Our fellows' swords
Could not withstand the Tatar hordes!"

With which he fell—in bloody agony
To die a soldier's death. . . .
His wife raised the small child on high
To witness his last breath:
"Look son, and learn how men go to their rest
And think on vengeance—from your mother's
breast!"

1831

THE ANGEL

One midnight an angel flew over the sky,
With a song on his lips he did fly,
And a bevy of clouds, the bright moon and the stars
To his song listened, rapt, from afar.

Of the sinless he sang that in paradise dwell,
Of the bliss that is theirs he did tell,
Of the glory of God sang he too, and sincere,
True and simple his praises they were.

In his arms a babe's soul held he, bearing it to
This dark world where, alas, joys are few,
And the sound of his song, its celestial strains
With that young soul did wordless remain.

Long it languished on earth, full of dreams and
desires,
With the sounds born of Heaven afire,

And the dull songs of earth, though the air they did
fill,
These rare, heavenly sounds could not still.

1831



The chains of mountains blue I love,
When, like a meteor, above
Their tops the moon appears, a bright
Yet lightless disc, red-hued, of night
And of the bard's best thoughts
the queen,
A gem that crowns the skies, its sheen
Such that their pride in it is to
An earthly tsar's akin. . . . A few
Of twilight's lingering rays are slow
To leave the dusky dome; their glow
The ribs of clouds enlivens still. . . .
Yet go they must, and do. . . . A chill,
White-visaged crescent floats on high. . . .
Two woolpacks scud across the sky
And towards it glide. . . . Around it they
Will band, and frame its face in grey. . . .
Thin, gauzy wisps of dark-edged cloud—
No richer veil is it allowed.
Amid the hills, in steppeland lone—
Such nights as these who has not known?
Once, to the empty stillness wed,
With just such moonlight overhead,
On horseback o'er the vastness blue
Of vales, free as the wind I flew.
Upon my horse's back and mane
The shadowed crescent sent a rain
Of silvered spangles. . . . As we two
Swept on, each breath my charger drew

Seemed to be mine; I felt him pound
The springy and unyielding ground,
I felt its answering upward thrust. . . .
Transported, rapt, in him my trust
I put, and did no more restrain
His movements, curbing mine that gain
We might a unity and be
As one. . . . Hours passed, and onward we
Still sped. . . . I glanced about me: lo!—
The moon upon the steppe its glow
Shed as before, and yet at me
It seemed to stare reproachfully,
For I, a man, o'er these steppes mute
Its reign had, brazen, dared dispute!

1832

TO***

I will not play the suitor's part,
Henceforth your smiles have no more power
Nor yet your frowns to move my heart.
Know! We are strangers from this hour.
You have forgotten, it appears—
My freedom I'll not sacrifice
To error: as it is—two years
And more I've wasted on your eyes
And smile, and, as it is, too long
Have all my youthful hopes been vested
In you! That love might wax more strong
The whole world else have I detested.
Who knows! Perhaps the moments squandered
At your feet served but to estrange
Me from the Muse. And what, I wonder,
Did you e'er give me in exchange?
It maybe, in high thought immersed,
My spirit powered in poetry,

I might have written wondrous verse
And so gained immortality?
Why did you promise tenderly
A crown more coveted than fame?
Why and, oh why, could you not be
At first as you at last became!
I will not plead! Love whom you will,
Or dream of love upon you laved!
There's nothing on this earth can kill
My pride or hold me still enslaved.
To far-off mountains, southern skies,
I'll make my way, perhaps, and yet
Too close between us are the ties
That we should easily forget.
From now on I shall take my pleasure
Wherever hearts are to be won.
I'll laugh with all—but I shall never
Weep any more with anyone.
And so I should not love the sex,
As I have loved, I'll love and leave them.
How should I womankind respect
When even an angel proves deceiving?
I would have death or torment dared
Or—madman!—taken up my stand
Against the world in arms—to share
The pressure of your youthful hand!
My soul I gave, without reserve,
Knowing no perfidy, most true.
Did you of that soul know the worth?—
You knew. But I did not know you.

1832

* * *

Not Byron—of a different kind
Chosen of fate, yet still unknown,
Outcast as he and driven from home

Yet Russian I—in heart and mind.

Earlier begun and earlier done
But slight will my achievement be . . .
And wrecked hopes lie like sunken suns
In my soul's depths as in the sea.

Who, gloomy ocean depths has told
Your tale of mysteries? And who—if anyone
My thoughts can to the mob unfold?
Why—I myself, or God, or none.

1832

THE SAIL

A lone white sail shows for an instant
Where gleams the sea, an azure streak.
What left it in its homeland distant?
In alien parts what does it seek?
The billows play, the mast bends, creaking,
The wind, impatient, moans and sighs. . . .
It is not joy that it is seeking,
Nor is't from happiness it flies.
The blue waves dance, they dance and tremble,
The sun's bright rays caress the seas.
And yet for storm it begs, the rebel,
As if in storm lurked calm and peace! . . .

1832

THE REED

A fisherman sat humming
Beside a stream one day
And watched the wind of morning

The reeds and grasses sway.
He cut a reed, and, making
A hole in it or two,
To one end held a finger
And in the other blew.

The reed to life was wakened,
It spoke up with a sigh.
Was't voice of wind or maiden,
Its gentle voice and shy?
"O fisherman," it begged him,
"Do not torment me so.
O fisherman, I pray you,
Hear out my tale of woe.

"A fair and lovely maiden
But motherless I was.
I bloomed, but bloomed unwanted,
By no one loved, alas!
My father he remarried
And took a witch to wife.
I called on death to claim me
So wretched was my life.

"The witch she had a dearly
Beloved son, had she,
A worthless rogue and scapegrace
Who fooled young maids was he.
I went with him one evening
To walk beside the stream
And watch its waters mirror
The sun's last dying gleam.

"My love in vain he begged for—
Him and his pleas I spurned.
Gold coins to me he offered—
In ire from him I turned.
Then with his knife he struck me,
He struck me in the breast.

A grave he dug and put me
There on the bank to rest.

“And o’er my grave soon after
There grew a slender reed,
And in it live the sorrows
That made my young heart bleed.
O fisherman, pray leave me,
Do not disturb my sleep.
Alack, you cannot help me
And have not learnt to weep! . . .”

1832

THE MERMAID

1

A young mermaid once swam and plashed in a stream
That was lit by a full moon’s bright beam,
And she struck at the waves, for she wanted to send
The white foam to the moon overhead.

2

And the stream leapt and danced and rushed noisily on,
And the clouds in its depths whirled and spun.
And the mermaid she sang, and her song echoed o’er
The blue water and high, rocky shore.

3

Sang the mermaid: “Deep down, hid from everyone’s sight,
There are flashes of colour and light,
Crystal cities that give off a magical glow,
Golden fishes that flit to and fro.

4

“On bright pillows of sand, in the stream’s cool embrace,
With the sea grasses shading his face,
Sleeps a knight, of the jealous blue waters the prey,
Sleeps a knight from a land faraway.

5

“And my sisters and I, when we tire of our play,
By the side of the knight like to stay,
And we comb his silk locks with a gold comb, and his
Ashen brow and pale lips gently kiss.

6

“But the knight never stirs and, I cannot tell why,
To our kisses he does not reply.
Cold and still lies he there, by a deep slumber bound,
And no murmur escapes him, no sound.”

7

So the mermaid she sang, filled with sadness and pain,
With a sorrow she could not explain,
And the stream leapt and danced and rushed noisily on,
And the clouds in its depths whirled and spun.

1832

ON THE DEATH OF THE POET

The poet is no more! He’s fallen
A slave to honour—
Lead in his chest, for vengeance calling,
The proud head bowed at last—he died! . . .
He would not brook the rankling shame

The petty calumnies, the stain
 They sought to put upon his name. . . .
 Alone he stood, and now is slain!
 Is slain. . . . What use in lamentation,
 Or empty choruses of praise,
 Belated words of exculpation?
 Say rather—Fate cut short his days!
 Yet—are you blameless, you who banned
 His free, brave talent out of spite,
 And smouldering flames to white heat fanned
 That should have been extinguished quite?
 Come, be content, then—such refinement
 Of pain was more than he could bear.
 The lamp of genius is no longer shining,
 The laurel wreath is fading now and sear.

Yet the assassin knew no hesitation
 In coolly taking aim . . . not one
 Beat missed that heart; no saving revelation
 Made tremble that fell hand which held the gun. . . .
 Hard is it though indeed to credit
 How came it that this common émigré,
 This fortune hunter, this upstart careerist,
 This poor blind tool of destiny,
 Should, in his insolence, so spurn our land,
 Her language and her customs fair
 And spare no thought her chiefest pride to spare
 Nor pause to wonder *what* it was—he dare,
 To think 'gainst *what* he raised his hand! . . .
 So he is slain—our singer—dead and gone
 Like that less-known but well-beloved one
 Of whom he told in wondrous poetry,
 Who, like him by a ruthless hand undone,
 A victim fell to senseless jealousy.

Why did he leave his peaceable pursuits and
 friendships
 For this false world of harsh constraint and envy

To free and ardent heart so straight a pen?
Why did he give his hand to futile tattlers?
Why did he credence lend to liars, flatterers,
Who from his youth had been a judge of men? . . .

They've robbed him of his crown and set a crown of
thorns

All wound about with laurel on him now
The hidden spikes have deeply torn
The poet's glorious brow;
And even his last moments were envenomed
By gossips ill-disposed and vulgar whispering
And so he died—filled with vain thirst for vengeance
And plagued by broken hopes fast festering. . . .
The splendid songs will sound no more,
To silence must the great voice yield
In that small room without a door. . . .
And—ah!—those lips are sealed.

But as for you, you arrogant descendants
Of fathers famed for their base infamies
Who, with a slavish heel, have spurned the
remnants

Of nobler but less favoured families!
Who throng the throne, alert for gain—and gory
As executioners who cloak their vile intent
In robes of justice—so to slaughter Glory,
Freedom and Genius, seeming innocent!
But there's God's judgement, which fears not to wait;
A dreadful Judgement that's not bought nor sold.
It knows your inmost thoughts, ye panders reprobate,
It does not even hear the clink of gold.
Before this seat your slanders will not sway
That Judge both just and good. . .
Nor all your black blood serve to wash away
The poet's righteous blood.



Lermontov at the age of 3 or 4, dressed in a girl's frock, as was the fashion in those days. In his right hand he holds a crayon and in his left a scroll. The future poet was very fond of drawing since a very young child. This is a portrait in oils by an unknown painter.



Moscow, Red Gate Square (now Lermontov Square). It was here in the two-storied house on the left that Mikhail Lermontov was born in the early hours of October 3rd, 1814. "Moscow is my home, and always will be: here I was born, here I knew much suffering, and here, too, I was happy." (From a letter.)





Maria Mikhailovna Lermontova—the poet's mother. She died when the boy was two and a half years old. Portrait in oils by a serf painter.



Yuri Petrovich Lermontov—the poet's father. This portrait was painted in watercolours by Mikhail in 1829 when he was fifteen years old.

When, sprayed by perfumed dewdrops, of a chilly,
Rose-tinted, dreamy night or after dawn, at me
From 'neath an emerald bush the tender lily
Its tiny, silver head nods cheerily;

When plays an icy spring and o'er the gully dances,
And I can feel my thought to hazy dreams succumb
Born of its soft-voiced babbling, when romances
It spins of peaceful lands whence it has come—

Then does my lined brow clear; the lingering sadness
That fills my troubled heart leaves it at long last free;
Above me, in the skies, God do I see;
On earth, know rich, rewarding gladness.

1837

* * *

Though we have parted, on my breast
Your likeness as of old I wear.
It brings my spirit joy and rest
Pale phantom of a happier year.
To other passions now I thrill,
Yet cannot leave this love of mine.
A cast-down idol—god-like still,
A shrine abandoned—yet a shrine. . . .

1837

* * *

Pray, laugh not at a gloom of dark foreboding born:
Fate will to me its blows mete out, unhesitating.
This head you say you love, now resting on your warm
Breast, on the block will lie, the headsman's axe
awaiting.

I told you I would find no happiness or fame
In this dull world, that gory death would claim
Me, that I'd fall, my unripe genius slighted,
Maligned by enmity with smiling nonchalance,
And of my hope and torment not a trace
Remain^{ing}. . . . Yet am I in no wise frightened
Of an untimely end: already far too long
The pains and sorrows of this life I sample;
Another world awaits me. . . . Let the throng
My crown of thorns, a poet's garland, trample! . . .
I never prized it, I admit.

1837

MEDITATION

With deep distress I contemplate our generation
Its future stretches on to darkness, emptiness.
Knowing too much, lost in equivocation,
It grows towards old age in idleness.
For we are rich, from infancy or almost,
In all our fathers' faults, their hindsight and their wit,
And life, like a smooth road without a goal, has dulled us
Like guests who at an alien banquet sit.
To good and evil shamefully indiff'rent
We wilt yet in the slips, before the lances' shock. . .
In danger's face—we offer no resistance,
Cowed by authority, a servile flock.
So some poor fruit, too early come to ripeness,
Void of delight—for palate as for eye,
Might dangle waif-like midst Spring blossoms' brightness,
Aware—even as they bloom—that it must die!

Our brain is all dried up by arid learning,
And, jealously, from our best friends we hide
Our dearest hopes and even the noble burning
Of passions which our sceptic minds deride.

Our lips have scarcely touched the cup of pleasure
Yet by this caution we've not saved our strength;
Fearing excess, we have drawn off a measure
From every joy—and left all flat at length.

Great works of art and high, poetic dreaming
Wake in our minds no sweet, responsive thrill
And, avidly we hoard the dregs of feeling,
A miser's wasted talent—buried still.
And casual all alike our loves and hatreds,
We make no sacrifice to love or ire.
The coldness in our souls holds nothing sacred,
Yet in our blood seethes fire.
Bored by our ancestors' delights uproarious,
Their conscientious, childish revelry,
We, hastening joyless on to graves inglorious,
Look back in irony. . . .

A sullen multitude not long remembered
We'll flit earth's face and leave no mark,
No seed of fruitful thought have we engendered,
No work of genius, no living spark
To light the ages for our heirs and citizens to come. . . .
Who will dismiss us with a scornful epitaph
As, seeing his heritage despoiled, a son
Writes off his bankrupt father—with a laugh.

1838

THE POET

My dagger gleams with tracery of gold,
The blade is trusty, flawless;
It's steel is tempered by some craft of old,—
Some eastern secret lawless.

For many years a mountain tribesman's slave,
His every wish fulfilling,

To many an armed breast a fearful wound it gave
And claimed no wage for killing.

Faithful companion of its master's mirth
At insults clinking baneful,
In those far days this rich, enchaséd sheath
Had irksome seemed and shameful.

Beyond the Terek a bold Cossack took
It from its master's body.
Then in a pedlar's pack it lay forsook
Amongst his treasures shoddy.

Lost now that scabbard, battle-scarred and bent
Which cradled it victorious;
Upon my wall it gleams, a golden ornament,
Alas—now harmless and inglorious!

No one to clean it now, no practised fingers drawn
Caressingly along the edges,
No lips repeat the inscribed prayers each dawn,
The ancient zealous pledges. . . .

In our tame age, ah poet, think how you
Have lost significance. . .
Exchanged for gold that power which hitherto
Commanded reverence!

Your measured words set warriors' hearts afire
As battle trumpets' blare;
Made drunk like wine, and even might aspire
To rise like incense at the hour of prayer.

Your verses, like the Spirit, hovered free
The echo of great thoughts to catch and tell;

At times of triumph or calamity
Your voice would ring forth like the Veche bell.

Yet now your ancient mode, so simple and so proud,
We quit for gayer trappings
And, like an ageing belle, our ageing muse would
shroud
Her ugliness in paint and gauzy wrappings.

Ah, poor, mocked prophet . . . will you never wake,
Nor ever now, to avenge these insults bent,
Pluck from its gilded sheath the dagger's blade
Now rusted by contempt?

1838

A COSSACK LULLABY

Sleep, my darling, sleep, my baby,
Close your eyes and sleep.
Darkness comes; into your cradle
Moonbeams shyly peep.
Many pretty songs I'll sing you
And a lullaby.
Pleasant dreams the night will bring you. . . .
Sleep, dear, rock-a-bye.

Muddy waters churn in anger,
Loud the Terek roars,
And a Chechen with a dagger
Leaps onto the shore.
Steeled your father is in gory
Battle. . . . You and I,
Little one, we need not worry. . . .
Sleep, dear, rock-a-bye.

There will come a day when boldly,
Like your dad, my son,

You will mount your horse and shoulder,
Proud, a Cossack gun.
With bright silks your saddle for you
I will sew. . . . There lie
Roads as yet untrod before you. . . .
Sleep, dear, rock-a-bye.

You'll grow up to be a fearless
Cossack, and a true.
Off you'll ride, and I'll stand tearless,
Looking after you.
But when you are gone from sight, son,
Bitterly I'll cry. . . .
May the dreams you dream be light, son;
Sleep, dear, rock-a-bye.

Thoughts of you when we are parted
All my days will fill.
In the nighttime, anxious-hearted,
Pray for you I will.
I'll be thinking that you're lonely,
That for home you sigh. . . .
Sleep, my son, my one and only,
Sleep, dear, rock-a-bye.

I will see you to the turning,
And you'll ride away.
With my icon you will journey
And before it pray.
Let your thoughts in time of danger
To your mother fly.
Close your eyes and sleep, my angel,
Sleep, dear, rock-a-bye.

THREE PALMS

A Tale of the East

Three palms proudly grew in Arabia fair. . . .
Beneath them, on soil that was arid and bare,
A spring bubbled up and went gurgling and playing,
No fear of the winds or the sandstorms betraying.
The leaves of the palms gave it coolness and shade,
And safe from the blaze in their shelter it stayed.

Years passed, but no wanderer, roaming these lands,
Discovered the spring in the midst of the sands,
None knelt here, none refuge and sustenance sought here,
None thirstily drank of the life-giving water. . . .
Years passed, and, exposed to the merciless sky,
The lush bower of leaves started slowly to dry.

"How harsh is our fate!" said the palms with a sigh.
"Alas! To be born but to wilt here and die.
In vain did we flower—for what good did it bring us?
In vain did we let sun and wind burn and sting us.
Our life has been futile, no man have we served. . . .
Unjust is thy wrath, Lord, and little deserved!"

They spoke, and at once, in the distance—behold!—
There rose clouds of dust of the colour of gold.
A jangling of bells rent the air, and a ringing,
And rug-covered packs, bright and many-hued bringing,
Like so many ships, with the seas safely spanned,
Of camels a train toward them ploughed through the sand.

And fast to the humps of the animals strung,
The sun-faded tents of the nomad folk hung,
A flashing dark eye peeping out through the flowing
And billowing folds, or a slender hand showing.

And, bent o'er the pommel, the desert's own son,
A slim-waisted Arab, his horse goaded on.

The horse neighed and reared, and then, neighing anew,
Pranced round, like an ounce by an arrow pierced through,
The horseman's white robes as he sat on the leaping
And whinnying steed, o'er its sable flanks sweeping,
And flying behind him, when, spinning about,
He flung up his lance with a whistle and a shout.

The nomads drew near; 'neath the palms camp was made,
And laughter and talk rent the calm. In the shade,
Jugs, parched by the sunshine, with water stood filling
That welled out the spring, gently humming and trilling.
The palms bowed and nodded and waved to their guests,
And gravely they offered them welcome and rest.

But dusk brought of axes the sharp, cruel sound,
And down came the lords of the sands to the ground.
Ripped off were their cloaks, torn to pieces and scattered,
Chopped up were their mighty old bodies and shattered,
And later, when night, cool and shadowy came,
Fed slowly to avid and hungering flame.

At dawn, as the mist westward sped and away,
The caravan, rising, set off on its way,
And there, on the ground, left abandoned behind it,
Of ash lay a heap. . . . For the sun rays to find it
Took minutes: they burnt it, and burnt it again,
And wind strewed the thin, greyish dust o'er the plain.

To-day, all is wild here and empty and bleak. . . .
Leaves, once never still, to the spring no more speak,
And vainly to God in its helplessness turning,
For shade does it beg—o'er it, white-hot and burning,
Whip sands, while nearby, in the bright glare of day
A brown tufted kite silent claws at its prey.

* * *

January 1

How frequently amidst the many-coloured crowd. .
When, to the stamp of feet and whirl of music loud,
As in a dream before my mind arises,
Drowned by the barbarous hum of commonplace
And thronged about by heartless faces—masks
Conventional, secure, void of surprises;

When city beauties, bold and all cool unconcern
Touch my cold hands with hands that long-since
ceased to burn
Or tremble at another's pressing. . .
Apparently absorbed in these bright vanities,
I seem to hear far off the sacred melodies
Of bygone years my soul caressing.

And, if for but one moment I can loose
Myself in memories—then, as I choose
A free, free bird back to the past I fly;
And see myself a child; and all around
The places that I love: my own home ground,
The stately manor tall against the sky;

The garden with its broken greenhouse and
The green-slimed, sleepy water; then, beyond,
The rising mist and village chimneys smoking.
I enter the dark avenue, and there
The evening light slants through the boughs to where
The yellow leaves stir at soft steps approaching.

Already my poor heart is thrilled with a strange awe:
She comes into my thought, I weep and I adore,
Adore the creature of my dreaming,
Whose eyes are brimming full of azure flame,

Whose smile is rosy as the day which came
At dawn behind the grove first gleaming.

And so, all-powerful in a kingdom of my own
Hour after hour I would sit alone. . .

And like an island green and chaste
The memory lives on amidst the stormy seas
Of doubts and passions . . . a sweet isle of ease
Amidst an elemental waste.

And when recalled to self, delusion recognised,
My uninvited dream, by worldly din surprised,
Is startled like a hart from my safe-keeping:—
Then how I long to shame their thoughtless gaiety
To cast full in their teeth verse like an iron-forged
The bitter point in gall and malice steeping.

1840

SUCH EMPTINESS, HEARTACHE

Such emptiness, heartache, and no one to stretch out their
hands

In comfort when storms overtake us.
Desires! What's the use of desires unfulfilled, vain
demands? . . .

So year follows year—all our best years escape us.

To love. . . . But why should we? . . . For a while it is not
worth the strain,

And no one can love on for ever.
But look in your heart . . . does one trace of the past yet
remain?

The joy of it all, and the sorrow—mere wasted
endeavour. . . .

The passions? Why, sooner or later their honied distemper

By rational caution is cured at one stroke. . .
And life—if you care to look round with cool-headed
attention—
Is simply an empty and rather a second-rate joke. . . .

1840

BECAUSE

If I am sad it is because I am in love with you,
And well I know: the blight of rumour most untrue
Will not forbear to mark your blooming youth with sorrow.

For every hour of joy Fate will exact tomorrow
A toll of tears and pain that you alone must pay.
So I am sad, my dearest love, because you are so gay.

1840

TO A CHILD

When youthful dreams return to plague and to torment me,
With what is secret pain and secret bliss, both lent me
By fortune, lovely child, on you delightedly
I gaze: if but you knew how dear you are to me!—

You and your quick, bright eyes, your guileless laugh,
 Voice, your gold curls. . . . 'Tis said, to me remembrance
 bringing

Of what is past and gone, that you resemble her. . . .

Alas! the years flit by. . . . Her features register
The ravages of time wrought before time by sorrow.
And yet within my breast, preserved by dreams, that far-
off,

That perfect image lives; ne'er does that gaze full of
Fire leave me. . . . But, my child, come, tell me, do you love
Me in return or not? . . . Perhaps of my caresses

Crimes hanging over you? Violence of enmity?
Or good friends calumnies, soft-voiced and
venomous?

None of these things. All alike insignificant
Are passion and pain and poor pastures fast
vanishing. . . .
Free both to come and go, free and indifferent,
You know not the meaning of home—or of
banishment.

1840

MY NATIVE LAND

I love my native land, but mine's a strange love, truly,
And baffles reason. Neither glory bought
With blood, nor, I record it duly,
A calm to proud faith wed, nor exploits brought
To life in tales and myths, and out the dim past taken
Within my heart a glad response awaken.

And yet I love, not knowing why they please,
Her rolling steppes, at once so chill and soundless,
Her wind-swept, rustling groves and forests boundless,
Her streams, by vernal floods made nigh as broad as
seas. . . .

Reclining in a cart and for a warm bed sighing,
I love to bump along a country road at night
And meet with drowsy eye, the shadowed dark defying,
Of cheerless villages the lonely, trembling lights.

Smoke coiling o'er a field of stubble,
A string of wagons, homeward bound
Or camping in the steppe, two humble
Young birches perched atop a mound,
A barn with grain stocked to the ceiling,

Carved wooden shutters, roofs of thatch—
 All, all within me rouse a feeling
 Of joy. . . . And, too, I like to watch
 The village dancers stamping wildly
 And whistling of a Sunday, while
 Drunk muzhiks, sitting nearby idly,
 With talk night's spun-out hours beguile.

1841

THE DREAM

In Daghestan, no cloud its hot sun cloaking,
 A bullet in my side, I lay without
 Movement or sound, my wound still fresh and
smoking
 And drop by drop my lifeblood trickling out.

Stretched on the sand I lay, and darkly round me
 The jutting hills hung motionless. . . . Upon
 Their tops the sun poured full; its bright rays
found me
 And burnt me too—but I slept soundly on.

I dreamt about my homeland and a merry
 And glittering feast where all was noise and glee
 And where young wives, flower-garlanded, in airy
 And lightsome talk indulged, and spoke of me.

But there was one who sat there pensive, buried
 In thought remote: alone she waxed not gay.
 By sorrowful dreams her youthful soul was carried,
 Why, only Heaven knew, far, far away.

'Twas Daghestan's bright vale that she did dream

of—

A man lay there whom she had known of old.
A black wound in his side gaped and a stream of
Blood from it came that, slowing, fast turned cold.

1841

* * *

1

No, not on you my passion's bent
And not for me your beauty's splendour:
In you I love what I remember
Of sorrow past and youth misspent.

2

And sometimes when I look at you and seek
With steadfast gaze to penetrate your heart
In occult colloquies I bear my part—
But it is with another that I speak.

3

I speak then with that long-lost love of mine,
Seek other features in your features' stead
And, in your living lips, see lips long dead,
And see your eyes with burnt-out ardours shine.

1841

* * *

1

Lone's the mist-cloaked road before me lying;
On and on it winds and draws me far.
Night is still, all earthly sounds are dying;
Nature lists to God; star speaks to star.

2

Clothed in dark is earth and wrapt in slumber,
And the skies are full of majesty.
Why, then, does reflection, drear and sombre,
Plague my heart and slay felicity?

3

I await no boons of fate, regretting
Not the past, for that is buried deep.
Ah, to find true freedom, true forgetting
In the calm of everlasting sleep!

4

Yet I dread the cold and clammy fingers
And the leaden, icy sleep of death.
Would that life within me, dormant, lingered
And I felt its warm and balmy breath;

5

Would that love's own voice, my ear caressing,
Night and day sang dulcet song to me,
And an ancient oak, my slumber blessing,
Swayed above my head eternally.

1841

THE SEA PRINCESS

Bathing his horse was a prince one fine day. . . .
Round them the sea plashed. "Prince, look at me, pray!"

Whispered a voice, and the horse, in a fright,
Plunged, kicked and snorted, and tried to take flight.



Yelizaveta Alexeyevna Arsenyeva, née Stolypina, the poet's grandmother who brought up the motherless boy. Portrait in oils by an unknown painter.



Tarkhany. The Arsenyev family estate. The poet spent his childhood here. Drawing by Borel. First half of the 19th century.





Tarkhany. The church and the chapel where Mikhail Lermontov was buried.
Photograph.



Serednikovo. The Stolypins' estate near Moscow where Lermontov spent the
summers of 1829-1831. The house was designed by Rastrelli.

"Come, prince," the voice said, "a king's child am I.
Come, my beloved, in my arms you shall lie!"

Out of the sea shows a hand white as milk,
Clutches it does at the bridle of silk.

Then does a maid's head emerge; in the hair
Seaweed is twined; drops of water like rare

Pearls on the neck gleam; the eyes, deep and blue,
Flame with a feverish passion and true.

"Wait!" the prince mutters. "Thou fair damsel, wait!"
Boldly his deft fingers grasp at her plait.

Holds he the maid, while despairingly she
Struggles and weeps and attempts to break free.

Deaf to her pleas and still gripping her tight,
Quickly for shore with the maid makes the knight.

"Ho, friends, come nigh!" to his comrades calls he.
"Look at the prize I have torn from the sea!"

"Why do you stand there so still on the shore?
Have you not gazed on such beauty before?"

Back for a glance turns the prince—from his eye
Triumph fast fades and a horrified cry

Bursts from his lips—at his feet lies no pale
Maid but a monster whose green, scaly tail

Coils like a serpent's, and, coming unwound,
Trembles and shivers and twists on the ground.

Sea foam streams down o'er the white, anguished face;
Death's ashen pall shrouds the blue of the gaze;

Limp fingers clutch at the sand, and the weak
Lips muffled words of reproach softly speak. . . .

Off rides the knight, dark of soul, dark of brow—
He would forget her, but does not know how.

1841

THE CROSS ATOP A CLIFF

So high does a cliff in the Caucasus rear
That none but an eagle can reach it, I fear.
And yet, warped by rain and the wind's mighty blows,
An old wooden cross, black with age, o'er it shows.

For years without end have the hills watched it rise,
A thing of the past, to the fathomless skies,
Its arms upward stretched as though wanting to seize
The clouds that sail o'er them with such perfect ease.

If but I could climb to the top of the steep,
What prayers would I chant there and how I would
weep!

The chains of existence I'd cast off with scorn
And be as a brother to tempest and storm!

1841

LONG POEMS

THE LAY OF TSAR IVAN VASSILYEVICH,
HIS YOUNG OPRICHNIK AND THE
STOUTHEARTED MERCHANT KALASHNIKOV

Hail to thee, all hail, Tsar Ivan Vassilyevich!
'Tis of thee our lay we did make, O Tsar!
Aye, of thee, and thy well-liked *oprichnik*,
And the stouthearted merchant Kaláshnikov.
In the ancient manner we made the lay,
To the strains of the psaltery sing it we did,
We intoned it loud and we chanted it,
And all good Christian folk took delight in it.
As for *boyar* Matvéi Romodánovsky,
He to each gave a goblet of foaming mead,
And his lady fair did to us present,
On a silver tray laid out prettily,
A right handsome towel sewn with silken thread.
For three days and three nights in the feast we
Sing we did 'thout end, but they clamoured for
joined,
more.

I

Nay, 'tis not the sun shining bright in the sky,
With the clouds at its beauty marvelling;
'Tis the Tsar at his board seated, proud of mien,
Tsar Ivan Vassilyevich in his crown of gold.
And behind him there stand his serving men,
And before him the *boyars* and princes sit,
His *oprichniks* they sit to each side of him.
To the glory of God does the good Tsar feast,
Merry makes the Tsar to his heart's content.

With a smile does he now bid his serving men
Fill his own gold cup full of rich, sweet wine,
Full of rich, sweet wine from beyond the seas,
And to pass it round to his henchmen bold—
The *oprichniks* drink and the Tsar they praise.

One amongst them all, he, a fine, brave youth,
But a wilful one, of unruly heart,
In the golden cup did not wet his lips;
Dark of face he sat, with his head bowed low
And his eyes cast down to the very ground,
Plunged in gloom sat he and in trying thought.

And the mighty Tsar sorely vexed was he,
Knit his brows he did, and with piercing gaze,
Like the hawk that, grim, from the heights above
Eyes the grey-blue dove, so the youth he eyed.
But the youth sat on, with his head bowed low. . . .
In his wrath the Tsar brought his thick staff down;
With a deafening crash did its iron point
Full it sink and deep in the oaken floor—
Still the youth sat on, not a start gave he.
Then in thunderous tones did the Tsar speak up—
And the youth was roused from his revery.

“Hark and list, Kiribéyevich, brave my lad,
Is it treacherous thought thou dost harbour, say?
Dost thou envy the Tsar his glory and fame?
Of thy faithful service art weary grown? . . .
When the moon appears, the bright stars rejoice
That the paths of heaven wax luminous.
But should one amongst them hide its face,
To the shadowed earth it will, flashing, fall. . . .
'Tis not meet for thee, Kiribeyevich,
Thus to scorn thy Tsar and his revelry;
Art thou not a Skurátov man by birth,
In Malyúta's own house and home brought up? . . .”

To his Tsar the *oprichnik* answer made,
'Fore him low, to the very ground, he bowed:

“Hear me out, my Tsar, hear me out, I pray!
Be not wroth with me, thy unworthy slave!
Wine won’t quench the flames of a burning heart,
Gloomy thoughts and dark it will not drive off.
If I vex thee, sire, let thy will be done,
Bid them seize thy slave and his head chop off—
Heavy weighs it, Tsar, on my shoulders broad,
Of itself it bows to the grass-grown earth. . . .”

Said to him the Tsar, with a laugh said he:
“What is there that grieves one so brave and young?
Is thy silken coat frayed and worn with age?
Is thy sable cap, once so fine, now torn?
Is thy purse, once full, free of jingling coin?
Has thy sword, once sharp, tarnished grown and
blunt?
Has thy steed gone lame? Was he poorly shod?
Did a merchant’s son knock thee off thy feet
In a fist fight fought on the river bank?”

Kiribeyevich of the curly locks
Proudly tossed his head as reply he made:

“Not a merchant’s son, nor a *boyar*’s son,
Nay, no man is there that can knock me down;
Fast my good steed runs, never falters he;
Bright as polished glass gleams my sabre sharp;
By thy favour, sire, on a festive day
Boast I do of dress rich as any man’s;

When my steed I mount and go riding him
By the Moskva Stream and beyond as well,
With my silken sash round my waist wound tight
And my velvet cap trimmed with sable fur
On my curly head sitting rakishly,
At their gates appear fair young maids and wives,
By their gates they stand and they gaze at me,

And in whispers soft to each other speak.
Only one of them turns away from me,
With a striped silk veil her dear face she clothes. . .

“Search the whole of Russ, this our holy land,
And you’ll never find one as fair, O Tsar:
Moves she gracefully as a white-winged swan,
Gentle is her gaze as a sweet young dove’s,
Tender is her voice as a nightingale’s,
Pink as dawn’s first ray in the heavens high,
Bloom the roses two on her fresh young cheeks;
Twined with ribbons gay is her golden hair,
Tightly bound is it into silken plaits.
Down her shoulders, sire, run they playfully
And her bosom white touch caressingly.
Born was she in a merchant’s house and home
And is named Alyóna Dmítrevna.

“When I look at her I am not myself:
Strengthless grow my arms, limp they grow and weak,
And my eyes so keen, turn they dark and dim;
Sorrow fills my heart at the fearful thought
That the world alone I must roam, O Tsar.
In my charger swift I delight no more,
Nor in costly garb and in finery,
Little do I care for a well-stuffed purse. . . .
Who is there the gold that is mine to share?
Before whom shall I of my prowess boast?
’Fore whose gaze shall I my rich garb display?

“Give me leave to go to the Volga steppe,
Let me lead the life of a Cossack free.
My hot head will I there in battle lose,
By a Tatar hand ’twill be smitten off,
And the infidels for themselves will they
Take my sabre sharp and my goodly steed
And my saddle rich of Circassian make.
At my eyes the ravens will tear and peck,

On my lonely bones dreary rains will fall,
Without burial will my poor dust be
Blown across the steppe by a gusty wind. . . .”

To these words the Tsar with a laugh replied:
“Faithful servant mine, I will soothe thy pain,
To thy aid thy Tsar in thy grief will come.
Take my ruby ring and this necklace take—
Made of pearls is it full a joy to see;
Find a clever wife for a matchmaker,
And these precious gifts have her bear in haste
To thy lady fair Alyona Dmitrevna:
If she’ll have thee, lad, hold a wedding feast;
If she’ll have thee not, be not sore of heart.”

Hail to thee, all hail, Tsar Ivan Vassilyevich!
By thy cunning slave thou’rt deceived this day!
Aye, the truth has he from his Tsar withheld.
He has told thee not that his lady fair
Is another’s wife, is a merchant’s spouse,
That in church was she to her husband wed
By our holy rites, by the Christian law.

* * *

Drink deep, my lads! Sing out in glee!
Come, lads, tune up the psaltery!
With your ringing music drive away care,
Bring cheer to our host and his lady fair!

II

In the market place the young merchant sat,
Tall and handsome Stepán Paramónovich
Of the honest house of Kaláshnikov.

His gay silken wares laid he smartly out,
And his moneys he counted carefully,
In soft tones he called to the passers-by.
But 'twas little luck that the merchant had:
By his shop the rich folk they tarried not,
No one glanced within, no one bought his wares.

In the churches the vesper bells have rung,
O'er the Kremlin domes glow the sun's last rays;
Driven on by a singing, moaning wind,
Grey clouds scurry near and the heavens veil. . . .
The great market place it has emptied fast,
And the merchant Stepan Paramonovich
Shuts behind him the massive oaken door,
Turns the figured key in the foreign lock,
And beside the shop, on an iron chain
His old watchdog, a snarling beast, he leaves.
Then, in thought immersed, off the merchant goes
To his home and wife across Moskva Stream.

Comes he soon enough to his fine, tall house,
And amazed he looks to all sides of him:
For his fair young wife does not welcome him,
Bare the table stands, with no cloth on it,
'Fore the icon a single candle gleams.
Calls he then the aged servant woman:
"Come, speak up and say, Yereméyevna,
Where's thy mistress gone that I see her not?
Where's my wedded wife, Alyona Dmitrevna?
And my children dear, did they weary grow
Of their noisy games, of their play and sport?
Were they put abed at an early hour?"

"O my master dear, Stepan Paramonovich,
'Tis a full strange thing I will say to thee:
To the vespers went Alyona Dmitrevna;
But the priest and his wife are back from church,
They have lit a candle and at supper sit,

Yet thy lady fair she has not returned. . . .
And the little ones they are not at play,
Nor are they abed and asleep, the dears;
It is wailing they are and sobbing loud,
For their mother crying and calling her."

By a fearful thought was he visited,
Was the youthful merchant Kalashnikov.
By the window he stood with troubled heart,
At the snow-clad street gazed he fretfully.
It was dark without, and the snow swept down,
And it covered the tracks of the passers-by.

Of a sudden he hears a door slam shut,
And a hurried step to his ear it comes. . . .
Spins he round, and there—Heaven help us all!—
Stands his fair young wife, white of face she stands,
With her headpiece gone and her plaits untwined
And with hoarfrost powdered and melting snow,
And a look in her eye as of one insane,
And her ashen lips forming soundless words. . . .

“Where hast thou been a’wandering, wife, my
 wife?
 To what courtyard or square didst thou stray, come,
 speak,
 That thy head is bare and thy plaits undone
 And thy clothing torn and in disarray?
 From a wanton feast dost thou come this day?
 With the *boyars’* sons hast thou, wife, caroused?
 It was not for this we did plight our troth,
 It was not for this ’fore the holy shrine
 On our wedding morn we exchanged our rings.
 Behind oaken doors will I put thee, wife,
 With an iron lock I will lock thee fast.
 Ne’er the light of day shalt thou see again,
 Nay, nor cast a slur on my honest name.”

When the poor young wife heard these scathing
words,

Like an aspen leaf she began to shake,
She began to shake and to sob and weep;
Down her cheeks the bitter tears they rolled,
To her knees she sank at her husband's feet.

"O my lord, my own, O my radiant sun!
Hear me out or else slay me here and now.
Every word thou sayest to thy hapless wife
Is a knife of steel that doth pierce her heart.
'Tis not death I fear be it e'er so cruel,
'Tis not idle rumour that frightens me,
'Tis my lord's displeasure I fear to risk.

"On my way I was from the church this night,
All alone I was when I thought I heard—
Just behind me, mind—someone's footsteps come.
Glanced I round, and, oh, how my knees they
shook!—

'Twas a man, my lord, running after me. . . .
O'er my face my veil pulled I close in haste.
But the brazen one caught my hands in his,
In a whisper soft spoke he thus to me:
'Wherefore fearest thou me, my lovely one?
Not a robber am I, not a highwayman
But the Tsar's *oprichnik* Kiribeyevich,
Of Malyuta's own house and family. . . .'
By these words was I frightened all the more,
My poor head it spun and my sight grew dim. . . .
He embraced me then and he kissed me too,
Hold me close he did, and he whispered thus:
'Speak and tell me, love, what thou wishest for,
Speak and answer me, and it shall be thine!
Is it pearls or gold that thy heart doth crave,
Is't brocade or silk thou wouldst have from me?
I will dress thee, love, like a princess true,
Of our Moscow wives thou'lt the envy be! . . .
Do not let me die a poor sinner's death,

Do not let my love unrequited stay,
Love me, kiss me, do, ere we part this night!

“And he kissed me then, kissed me many times,
Even now, my lord, when I’m safely back
In my husband’s house, like a living flame
His cursed kisses burn on my cheeks and brow.
At their gates, I saw, stood the neighbours’ wives,
And they gaped at us, and they laughed in scorn. . . .

“From his grasp at last I did tear myself,
And for home I made at a run, my lord. . . .
In the villain’s hands did thy gifts remain,
Both my silken veil and my coverchief.
Me, the blameless one, hath he sorely wronged,
On my honest self hath he brought disgrace. . . .
What wild tales of me will the neighbours spin?
’Fore whose eyes shall I dare to show myself? . . .

“Pray, protect me, do, from the spiteful-tongued,
At thy faithful wife do not let them jeer!
Whom have I to trust but thy own sweet self
And to whom but thee can I turn for help?
But for thee am I in the world alone,
For my parents dear in the grave they lie,
In the cold, dark grave lie they do, alas!
Of my brothers two, one, the elder, left
For a distant shore and was seen no more,
And the younger, thou knowest, is a child in years,
Aye, a child in years and in wisdom too. . . .”

It was thus spoke Alyona Dmitrevna,
Bitter tears she wept and her lot bemoaned.

Then the merchant Stepan Paramonovich
For his younger brothers in haste he sent,
And his brothers they came and they bowed to him,

In this wise they did speak, the two of them:
"At thy bidding we come, elder brother ours;
What misfortune is thine, tell us truthfully,
That we're summoned by thee at an hour so late
Of a frosty night in the wintertime? . . ."

"Hear me, brothers mine, and I'll tell you all:
Great mischance this day hath befallen me,
For the Tsar's *oprichnik* Kiribeyevich
On our honest name hath brought disgrace,
And a true man's heart cannot bear such wrong,
Such offence as this it cannot endure.
On the morrow the first fight is to be,
In the Tsar's own presence, on Moskva Stream. . . .
With the Tsar's *oprichnik* I'll come to grips,
To the death the rascally knave I'll fight!
And should I be slain, then, my brothers dear,
Come you out in my stead and fight for truth,
Fight for honour and truth and be not afeared!
You are younger than I and of fresher strength,
You have sinned the less, and your souls are pure,
And perchance the Lord will be kind to you."

And the brothers two in reply they said:
"Where the wind it blows in the heavens high,
There the clouds, obedient, rush in haste.
When the blue-winged eagle with raucous cry
Calls his young to the field where lie the slain,
When he summons them to a gory feast,
At his call they come without dallying.
Thou'rt a father true, brother dear, to us,
'Tis for thee to say and for us to do;
That by thee we'll stand thou canst rest assured."

* * *

Drink deep, my lads! Sing out in glee!
Come, lads, tune up the psaltery!

With your ringing music drive away care,
Bring cheer to our host and his lady fair!

III

Over Moscow the great and golden-domed,
O'er the Kremlin walls, o'er its white stone walls,
Rises early morn in its crimson robes.
From beyond the hills comes the early morn,
And it steals o'er the housetops playfully,
And it drives off the clouds relentlessly.
Its gold tresses the morn o'er the blue skies spreads,
And its face it bathes in the snows so white,
Like a proud young beauty in a looking glass
It beholds itself in the heavens clear.
Why art thou awake, crimson morn so bright?
Why dost thou rejoice, early morn so fresh?

From the whole of ancient Moscow-town
Came the fighters bold, came the fighters brave,
For the fisticuffs on the holiday
Gathered they by the frozen Moskva Stream.
And the Tsar himself with his retinue,
His *oprichniks* all and his *boyars* came,
And he bade them stretch a long silver chain,
A long silver chain soldered fast with gold,
And to measure off on the river ice
A large open place for the sporting match.
Then the mighty Tsar Ivan Vassilyevich
Bade his heralds call out in ringing tones:
"Come ye forth, brave lads, come ye forth and fight
For to please the good Tsar, our father own!
Come ye forward, do, to the boxing ring;
Him who wins the match the Tsar will reward,
Him who loses it the Lord will forgive!"

'Thout a word Kiribeyevich now stepped forth,
Bowed he low to the Tsar and silently,

From his shoulders his velvet coat he flung,
His right hand on his hip he proudly placed,
With his hand his crimson hat set straight,
Stood he waiting so for a challenger. . . .
Once, and twice, and thrice rang the heralds' cry,
But the fighting men, doughty fellows all,
Only nudged each other and never stirred.

Round the ring the *oprichnik* audacious walks,
To his rivals he calls disdainfully:
"Why so timid, ye men, why so thoughtful, say?
With your lives, ne'er you fear, I will let you off,
Give you time I will to repent your sins,
Only let us fight and amuse the Tsar."

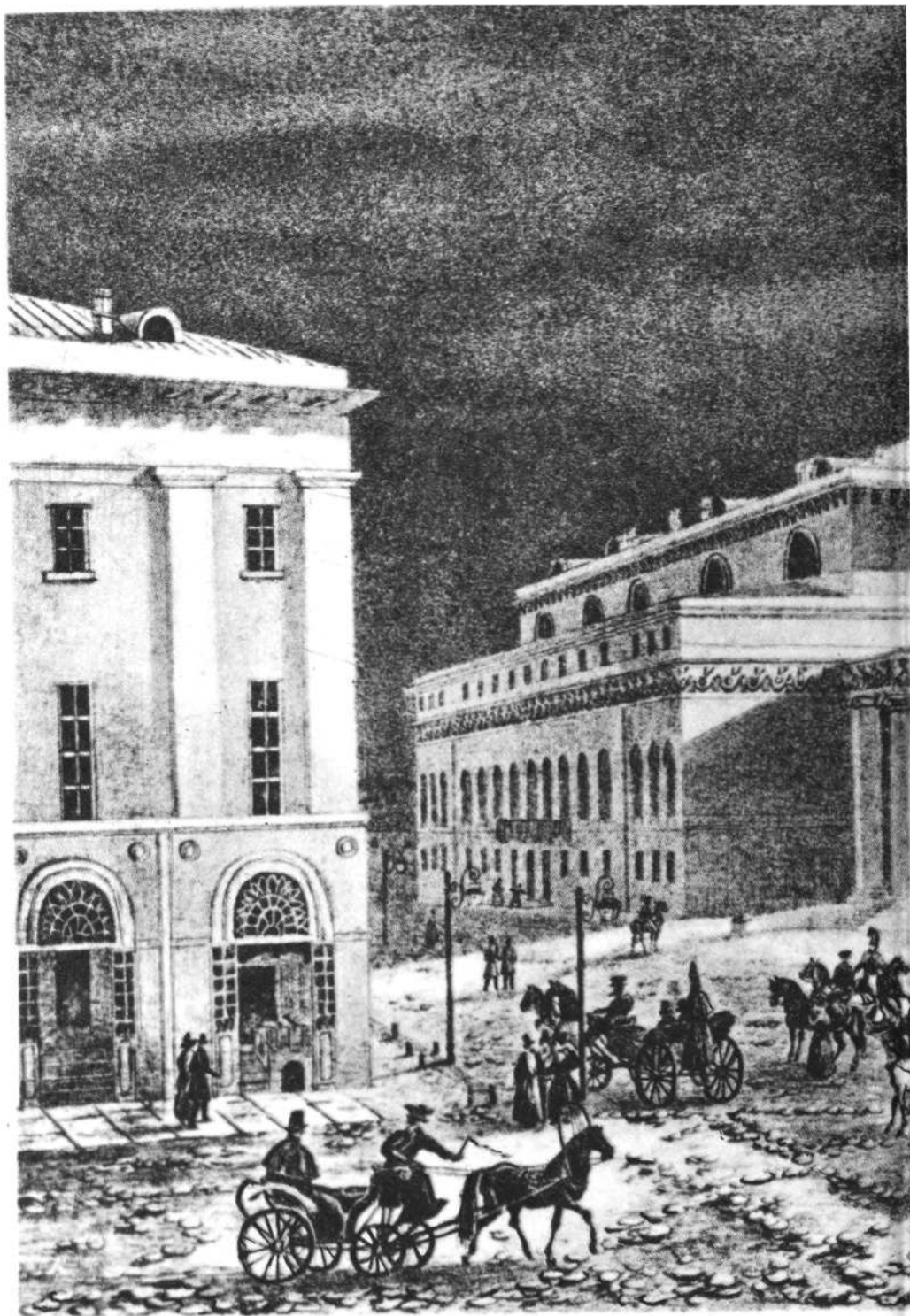
Of a sudden the crowd it silent parts,
And the merchant Stepan Paramonovich
Of the name and house of Kalashnikov
Steps he boldly forth for all eyes to see.
First Stepan Paramonovich bows to the Tsar,
To the Kremlin then and its churches all,
To the Russian folk bows he afterward.
Like a falcon's eyes so his eyes they burn,
On the young *oprichnik* he rivets them,
And before him his stand takes loftily.
Now, he pulls on his gauntlets, his fighting gloves,
And his mighty shoulders he proudly squares,
And his curly beard strokes he languidly.

The *oprichnik* then spoke, and this he said:
"Tell me, valiant youth, of what house thou art
And what name is thine, speak and tell me plain,
For how otherwise will I know, my lad,
Over whom the priests are to chant their prayers,
And how I'm to boast of my victory."

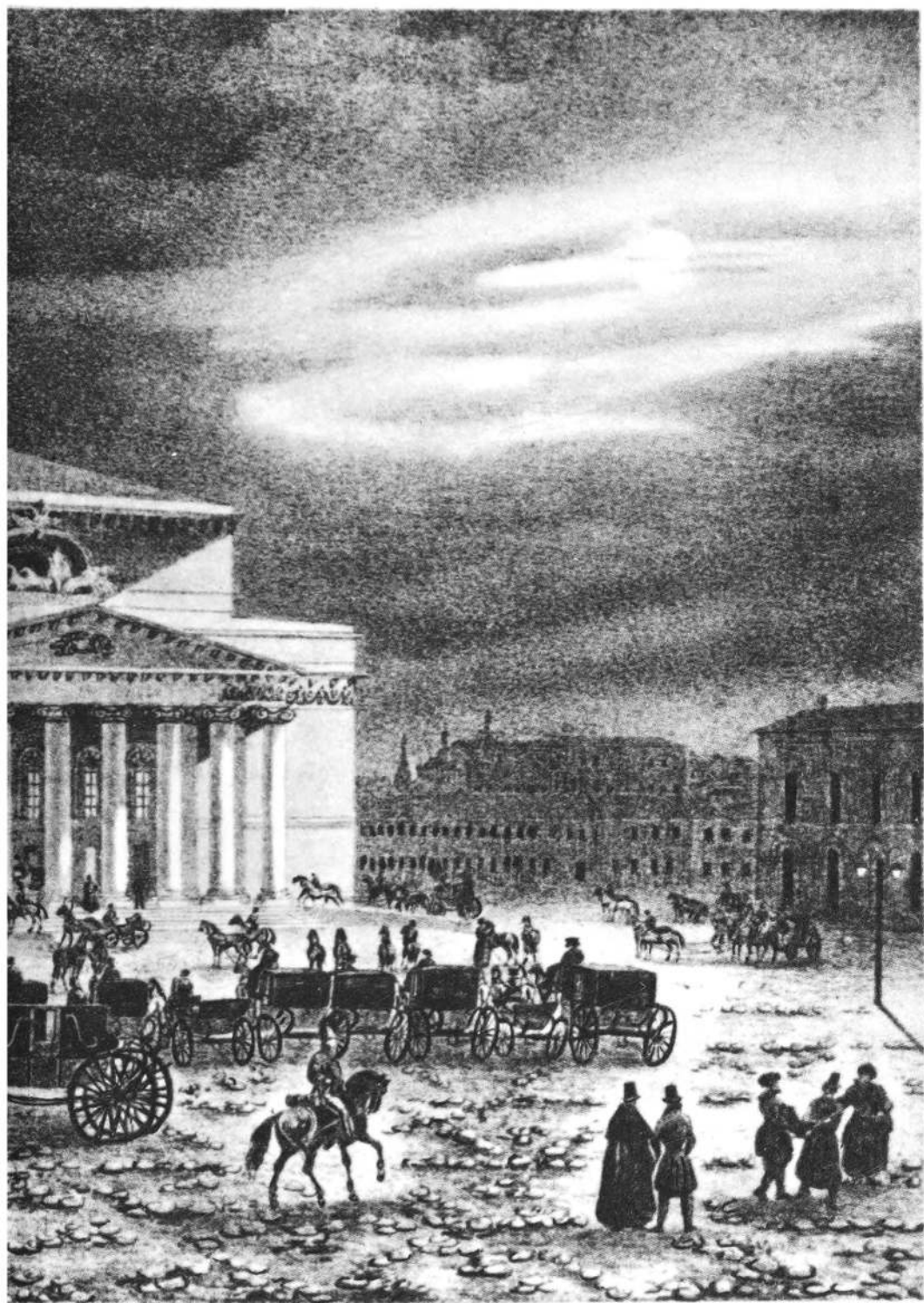
And Stepan Paramonovich answered thus:
"By the name of Kalashnikov am I known,



Moscow. Kremlin. The Belfry of Ivan the Great. From its top gallery Lermontov admired the panorama of the city when, as a boy of 13, he came to Moscow with his grandmother. An early 19th century lithograph.



Moscow. The Peter (now Bolshoi) Theatre which had burnt down in the great fire was reconstructed by architect Bove, and performances were resumed in 1825. As a boy, Lermontov saw Shakespeare's tragedies on its stage. An early 19th century lithograph.





1820-1822. A portrait in oils by an unknown painter. At this time Lermontov was still living with his grandmother in Tarkhany, but before long he was to leave for Moscow and become a boarder at the school for the sons of noble families, and then a student of Moscow University.

'Twas an honest man that did father me,
By the Lord's commands have I ever lived:
Never brought disgrace on another's wife,
Never stalked, a thief, in the dark of night,
Never hid myself from the light of day. . . .
Thou hast said a truthful word and just:
Over one of us will the priests they chant,
On the morrow, at noon, and no later, mind,
At a merry feast with his comrades bold,
One of us will boast of his victory.
Not in jest or sport, for the folk to watch,
Do I challenge thee, thou infidel's son,
But to wage a fight to the bitter end!"

At the merchant's speech, Kiribeyevich
Turned he nigh as grey as the snow of spring,
And his sparkling eye darkened all at once,
Down his mighty back ran a sudden chill,
On his parted lips froze his words, unsaid. . . .

Now the rivals two, silent, moved apart,
'Thout another sound did the fight commence.

Kiribeyevich was the first to strike;
His gloved hand he waved and a crushing blow
Struck the merchant brave on his mighty chest.
And Stepan Paramonovich staggered and reeled;
On his breast there dangled a copper cross
With a relic from holy Kiev-town,
And this cross bit deep into his firm flesh,
And like dew the blood from beneath it dripped.
And he said to himself, said the merchant brave:
"What is fated to be is bound to be;
For the truth will I stand to the very end!"
And he steadied himself as he made to strike,
And he gathered his strength and with all his force
Fetched his hated rival a round-arm blow,
Hit him full he did on the side of the head.

And the young *oprichnik* he softly moaned,
And he swayed and dropped to the icy ground,
To the icy ground like a pine he fell,
Like a slender pine in a wintry grove
By an axe cut down at the very roots. . . .
To the ground he fell, and he lay there, dead.

At this fearful sight was the Christian Tsar
Overcome by a blinding rage and fierce,
And he knit his brows, and he stamped his foot,
And he bade his men seize the merchant bold,
And to bring the knave 'fore his face at once.

Said the mighty Tsar Ivan Vassilyevich:
"Answer honestly, for I want the truth:
Was't with full intent or against thy will
Thou hast coldly slain my most trusted man,
My *oprichnik*, my Kiribeyevich?"

"I will tell thee true, o most righteous Tsar:
With intent have I slain thy trusted man;
But I'll tell thee not wherefore did I this,
To the Lord alone will I this disclose. . . .
Have me put to death; bid me place my head
On the butcher's block for the axe to smite;
But I pray thee, Tsar, to my widowed wife
And my children dear show thou clemency,
To my brothers two be thou merciful."

"'Tis a right good thing, my brave lad and true,
And is well for thee, honest merchantman,
That so truthfully thou hast answered me.
To thy orphans young and thy widowed wife
From my treasury I'll allot a share,
And throughout the length and the breadth, my lad,
Of the Russian realm shall thy brothers two
From this day and on trade 'thout tithe or tax.
As for thee, brave heart, on the block shalt thou

Thy wild head lay down by the Tsar's command;
I will have the blade made keen and sharp,
I will have the headsman wear fine, rich dress,
The great bell for thee will I bid them ring
That all Moscow-town, all the folk might know
That thy Tsar to thee of his goodwill gave. . . ."

To the market square the good townsfolk stream,
The bell's mournful knell o'er it, booming, floats,
Throughout Moscow-town evil tidings spreads.
On high ground the wooden scaffold rears;
In his scarlet blouse with its jeweled links
Does the headsman strut in front of the crowd
And await his victim right merrily.
His axe is well honed and made keen and sharp,
And he rubs his hands in open glee. . . .
And the stouthearted merchant Kalashnikov
Bids his brothers farewell and embraces them.

"O my brothers own, dear are you to me!
Let me hold you close, let us now embrace,
For 'tis soon you and I will forever part. . . .
Bow you low to my wife Alyona Dmitrevna,
Bow you low 'fore the house of our parents dear,
Bow you low to our friends and kinsmen all,
And then pray for me in the holy church,
For your brother pray and his sinful soul!"

And the merchant brave he was put to death,
'Twas a cruel death and a shameful one:
O'er him high the headsman raised his axe,
And his head rolled down from the bloody block.

Beyond Moskva Stream they buried him,
In the wide, open field where three roads meet:
To Tula, Ryazan and Vladimir towns;
O'er his grave a mound of damp earth they heaped,

And on that they set a maplewood cross,
 And the boisterous winds cannot be stilled,
 O'er his nameless grave they sing and play.
 By the grave the good folk pass they do:
 When an old man goes by, he crosses himself;
 When a young man goes by, his shoulders he squares;
 When a young maid goes by, she heaves a sigh;
 When a minstrel goes by, he sings a song.

* * *

Ho, ye brave lads and true,
 The makers of song,
 Ye whose voices ring merry and loud and strong!
 You began right well, and so end you must;
 Sing in praise of the worthy, the honest and just!
 To the freehanded *boyar*, glory and fame!
 To his lovely lady, glory and fame!
 And to all Christian folk, fame and glory!

1837

MTSYRI*

*I did but taste a little honey,
 and, lo, I must die.*

The First Book of the Kings

I

Where merge *Aragva* and her twin,
Kura, and fast rush onward, in
 Times past, a lonely cloister stood;
 By fields, a dense and o'ergrown wood

* Mtsyri—novice (Georgian).—Ed.

Encircled 'twas. . . . A wayfarer,
Toiling uphill, will see what were
A gate and gateposts once and, too,
A church. . . . To-day, no incense to
Its round dome coils, nor do a prayer
The humble monks chant, hoarse-voiced, there.
Alone, forgot by death and men,
A bent old greybeard, denizen
Of these remote and desolate hills,
Over the ruins watches still
And daily wipes the dust that clings
To tombs, of which the letterings
Of glories past speak and of things
Of like note. Of a tsar one such
Tells who by his gold crown was much
Weighed down, and did of Russia gain
The patronage o'er his domain.

'Twas then God's love descended on
The land, and Georgia bloomed, and gone
Her old fears were and old suspense:
Of friendly bayonets a fence
Did, bristling, rise in her defence.

II

A Russian General on his
Way one day was, bound for Tiflis,
A captive bearing there, a child
Of six or so. As shy and wild
The lad was as a chamois and
Thin as a reed. Ill could he stand
The rigours of the journey, as
Soon became evident, and was
By fever stricken. But no plea
Or moan escaped him, sick as he
Endured and weak: his fathers' free,
Proud spirit had from babyhood
His own been. . . . Offered drink and food,

He touched them not, and day by day
Was wasting visibly away.
A monk did see and take him in
And minister to him. Within
The cloister walls the lad remained,
And, by the monk's art healed, regained
His former strength. In childish play
Indulged he not; it was his way
To keep from all aloof and roam
The grounds alone. . . . For his old home
He pined, and oft was seen to gaze
Eastward and sigh. . . . But as the days
And years wore on, accustomed to
Captivity he slowly grew,
Was in due time baptized, and sought,
Unknowing of the world and taught
Little about it, to become
A monk. . . . Then one dark evening, from
His cell he vanished. Cloaked by haze
The forest was. For three long days
They searched in vain, and only found
Him on the fourth: stretched on the ground
He senseless lay, the grassy plain
His body cradling. Back again
They bore him to the cloister. Pale
And weak he was, like one whose frail
Frame had a dire disease survived
Or hunger, and seemed nigh deprived
Of tongue. . . . Death hovered near him, fate
Had willed it so. To remonstrate
With him the monk, his saviour, came. . . .
The sick man, who had speechless lain
Upon his bed, his waning strength
Now summoned and spoke up at length.

III

"I thank you, friend, for coming to
Hear my confession. . . . Aye, 'tis true

That to give utterance to my pain
Will ease it. . . . But you'll little gain
Of benefit from what I can
Relate to you. I harmed no man,
And for the rest—can one pour out
One's heart? . . . Nay, old one, this I doubt.
A captive's life has my life been
And brief. . . . Two such lives, calm if mean,
Would I exchange, if but I could,
For one, of risk, disquietude
And peril full. . . . As I recall,
One passion held me e'er in thrall;
It worm-like gnawed at me at first,
Then into flames devouring burst
And all of me consumed. . . . From prayer
And stifling cell to regions fair
Borne by my dreams was I, of strife
A wondrous world, where soaring cliff
Is hid by cloud, and men are free
As eagles. . . . Fed by misery
And tears my passion was, this now
'Fore earth and Heaven I avow! . . .
Yet I—to this, pray, give you heed—
For absolution do not plead.

IV

“ 'Twas you, old man, who saved, I know,
My life, the others told me so.
Why did you this? A small leaf, torn
By tempest from its branch, forlorn,
I lived behind these walls of gloom.
At heart a child, I had become
A cenobite at fate's command.
What man could I call father, and
What woman mother? . . . That forget
I would those two sweet words you'd let
Yourself believe. . . . Vain hope! The sound

Of them with me was born, and hound
My heart they did. . . . Of all that here
Dwelt, I alone no home, no dear
Friend, no relation, nay, not e'en
A loved grave had! I could but dream
Of them and childlike long to cry. . . .
But tears—what use were they? And I
Vowed that the day would dawn when to
My breast, content, I'd clasp one who,
Though but a stranger and unknown
To me and mine, hailed from yon lone
And distant range, the hills that gave
Me birth. . . . Alas, my friend, a slave
In alien parts, unloved, have I
Lived, and a slave am meant to die! . . .

v

"The grave I fear not: in its cold
And silent depths, grief, we are told,
And suffering sleep. . . . 'Tis that my heart
Is wrung with pain at thought that part
With life I must. . . . I'm young, do not
You see it? Young! . . . Have you forgot
Or never known youth's dreams? Have you
Not loved, not hated? Has the view
Of sunlit fields gained from the top
Of yonder tower ne'er made you stop
In breathless wonder? Have you ne'er
In avid thirst drunk of the air
That is so fragrant there, above,
And fresh? Have you not watched a dove
Cower in a crevice in the wall
During a storm? . . . Yet though to all
The beauty of the world you have
Blind in your old age grown, and crave
None of its sweet delights and rare—

What matter!—In your past there are
Things to forget—a happy lot! . . .
Aye, you have lived, and I have not.

VI

"Shall I describe what I did see
 While wandering, of my chains free,
 Beyond these walls?—Lush fields and leas,
 Hills garlanded and crowned with trees
 That moved like dancers in a ring
 Around the slopes, and, too, a string,
 A mass of hulking rocks cleft by
 Swift streams and torrents. . . .
 Their thoughts I
 Divined, by Heaven so to do
 'Twas given me from birth. . . . I knew,
 Watching their stone hands scratch the air,
 How fervently, with what despair
 These giants did in close embrace
 Long to be locked! . . . Alas! The days
 And, too, the years rush, fleeting, past
 And bring them closer not. . . . Aghast,
 Entranced at sight of mountains as
 Strange as are dreams, I stood. . . . The rays
 Of dawn their peaks touched. . . . To the skies
 Like smoking altars they did rise,
 And o'er them, high above the ground,
 The clouds sailed swiftly, eastward bound,
 Their hidden shelter of the night
 Abandoning fore'er. . . . A flight
 Of birds, a feathered caravan
 Resembled they. . . . Ahead began
 The Caucasus. . . . Skyward they rose,
 Immovable, in glittering snows
 As bright as diamonds clad. . . . Rejoice!
 That is your home, a secret voice
 Said, and at once my spirits soared—
 It was as if some hidden chord

Had touched been, for the past anew
Was born and ever clearer grew.

VII

"My father's house recall I did,
And, in a shady canyon hid,
Our village. . . . Once again I heard
The sound of hoofs and saw a herd
Of horses at the fall of dark
Race home. . . . A dog began to bark,
Another joined it. . . . Strangely clear
All these sounds were. . . . The oldsters near
Our porch sat, bronze-faced, dignified,
Full of a kind of inbred pride
And lordliness. . . . Their daggers shone
And, too, their scabbards as upon
Them fell the moon's pale, steady beam. . . .
These homely scenes as in a dream
Before me passed. . . . There, near me, stood
My father as from babyhood
I had remembered him, a proud,
Stern-featured man. . . . I heard the loud
Clanging of metal and did see
Him touch his gun. . . . My sisters three
Recalled I, too. . . . How tenderly
For me they cared, with what love rang
Their voices as to me they sang! . . .
Beside our house a stream did flow;
It was not deep, and I would go
At midday there, and on the sand
Lie idly, or play games, or stand
And watch a swallow with its wing
The water graze and promise bring
Of rain. . . . And oh, the nights when we
Would by the hearth sit quietly
And listen to long stories told
Of how men lived in times of old,

In a long past, a faraway
But richer and more sumptuous day.

VIII

"Know you how my three days I spent
Of freedom?... Truly Heaven-sent
Were they. . . . I lived! And my life would
'Thout them have sadder been, my good
Friend, than your helpless old age is.
I had long yearned (and in this wise
To yearn is anguish) for a sight
Of distant fields. . . . Lured by earth's bright
Beauty I was, and longed to see
If born for dark captivity
We mortals were, or freedom. . . . Then,
One night, during a rainstorm, when
The rest of you did prostrate lie
In fear beside the altar, I
Fled. . . . Like a brother to my breast
The mighty storm I would have pressed! . . .
With greedy eye the clouds I sought,
And in my hand the lightning caught. . . .
Say, what could these walls, dark with age,
Give me, a captive, in exchange
For that brief friendship, brief yet warm,
That bound my heart to raging storm? . . .

IX

"I ran 'thout rest—where, I knew not,
No star was out. . . . But, oh, with what
Delight I breathed of night's fresh air
And drank it in. . . . I was aware
Of little else but that the care
That had, a burden, lain upon
My heart, had lifted and was gone. . . .
On, on I ran. . . . Hours must have passed

Before upon the grass at last
I fell, quite spent. . . . None had my trail
Picked up. . . . The storm was o'er. . . . A pale
Ribbon of light 'twixt dark earth lay
And darker sky. . . . Against it, grey,
The jagged peaks of mountains could
Be seen. . . . I never moved. . . . The wood
And all in it was hushed and still;
From the ravine a jackal's shrill
Cry came that did an infant's seem
To imitate; the dullish gleam
I caught of scales as past me slid
A snake. . . . I felt no fear, for did
I not myself from human sight,
A beast, hide in the dark of night!

X

"I heard a stream rush down below;
The rains had fed it, and its low
Accents were fierce. It was as though
A hundred voices in dispute
At once were raised. I listened, mute. . . .
That blurred and wordless speech to me
Was clear enough: impatiently
The stream the stubborn stones addressed
That barred its path, and, angry, pressed
Them to make way. The argument
Went ceaseless on; 'twas vehement
And stormy; now it louder grew,
Now less loud; in the misty blue
Above the birds sang, and the wind
The damp leaves stirred; its touch was kind
But woke the flowers; I, too, like they,
In welcome to the newborn day
My head raised. Close to an abyss
I now saw that I lay, and this
Put fear in me. . . . The stream did roar

And seethe below. . . . Down to its shore
Great, massive steps of grey stone led;
Here Satan had with halting tread
Walked down them when he'd banished been
To hell's dim depths, its dark demesne.

XI

“Round me was paradise: the trees
Were brightly decked; of Heavenly tears
Their vivid garments bore the trace;
Grapevines embraced them, fine green lace
Resembling closely; here and there,
Like costly earrings made of rare
And lovely gems, great clusters of
Grapes hung, and on the boughs above
Perched birds; in flocks descended they
Upon the fruit, flew fast away,
Came back. . . . On to the ground anew
I sank and listened spellbound to
The strange and magic whispering
That filled the air and seemed to bring
To light the secrets of the sky
And of the earth; each breath and sigh,
All of the many voices clear
Of Nature, merging, reached my ear,
There, in her grand and beauteous bower,
But man's proud voice. . . . In that great hour
Of praise 'twas still. . . . What I felt then
I cannot ever feel again,
But when I speak of it I live,
If only in my thoughts. . . . Pray, give
Ear to my tale. . . . So clear and bright
The dome was that an angel's flight
Could easily perceived have been
By patient eye. . . . Ne'er had I seen
Such lucid skies, such a serene
And perfect blue! My heart and gaze
It lured. . . . Came noon: the sun's hot blaze,

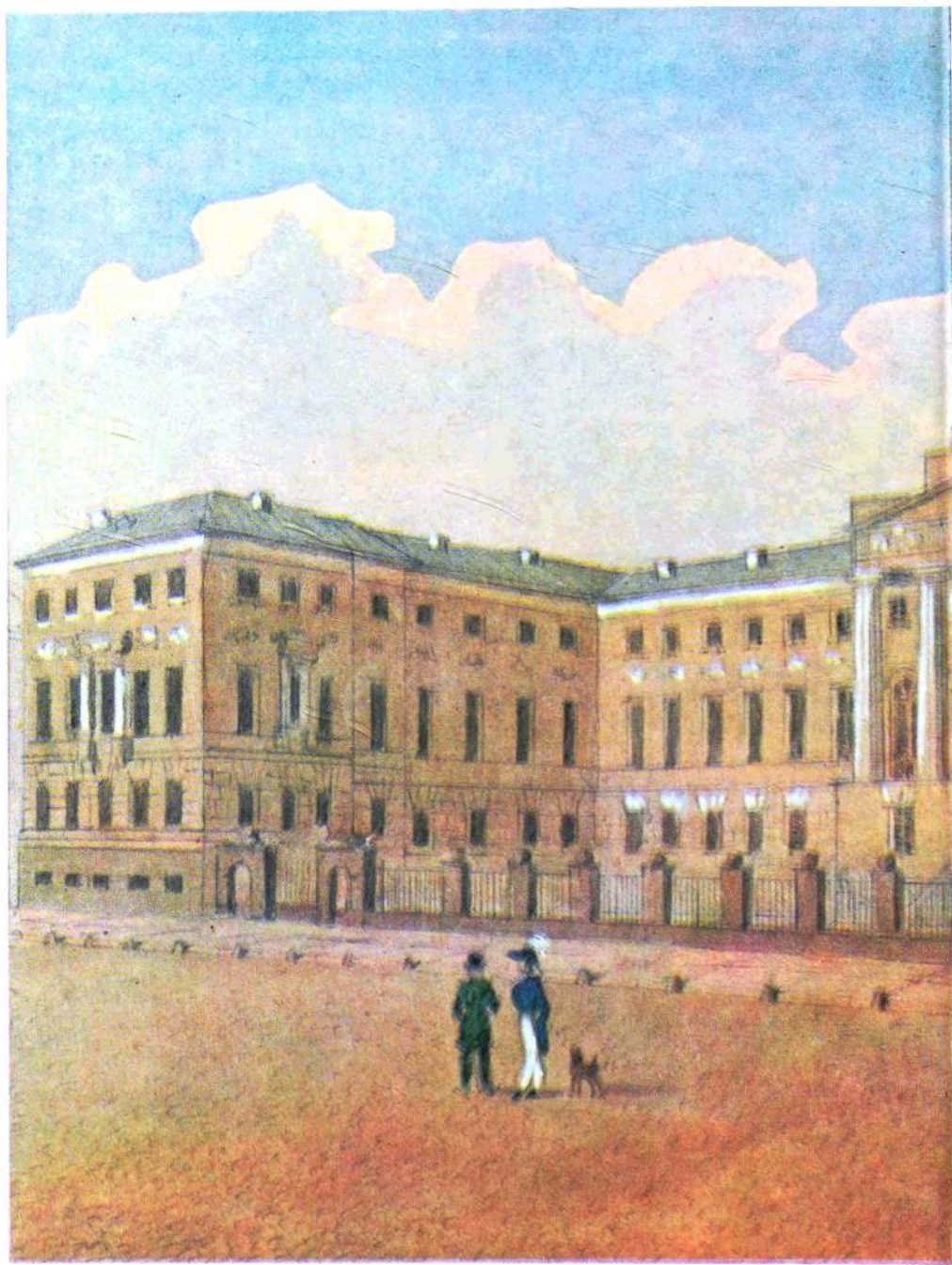
Its brilliant ray at once dispersed
My dreams and brought a lingering thirst.

XII

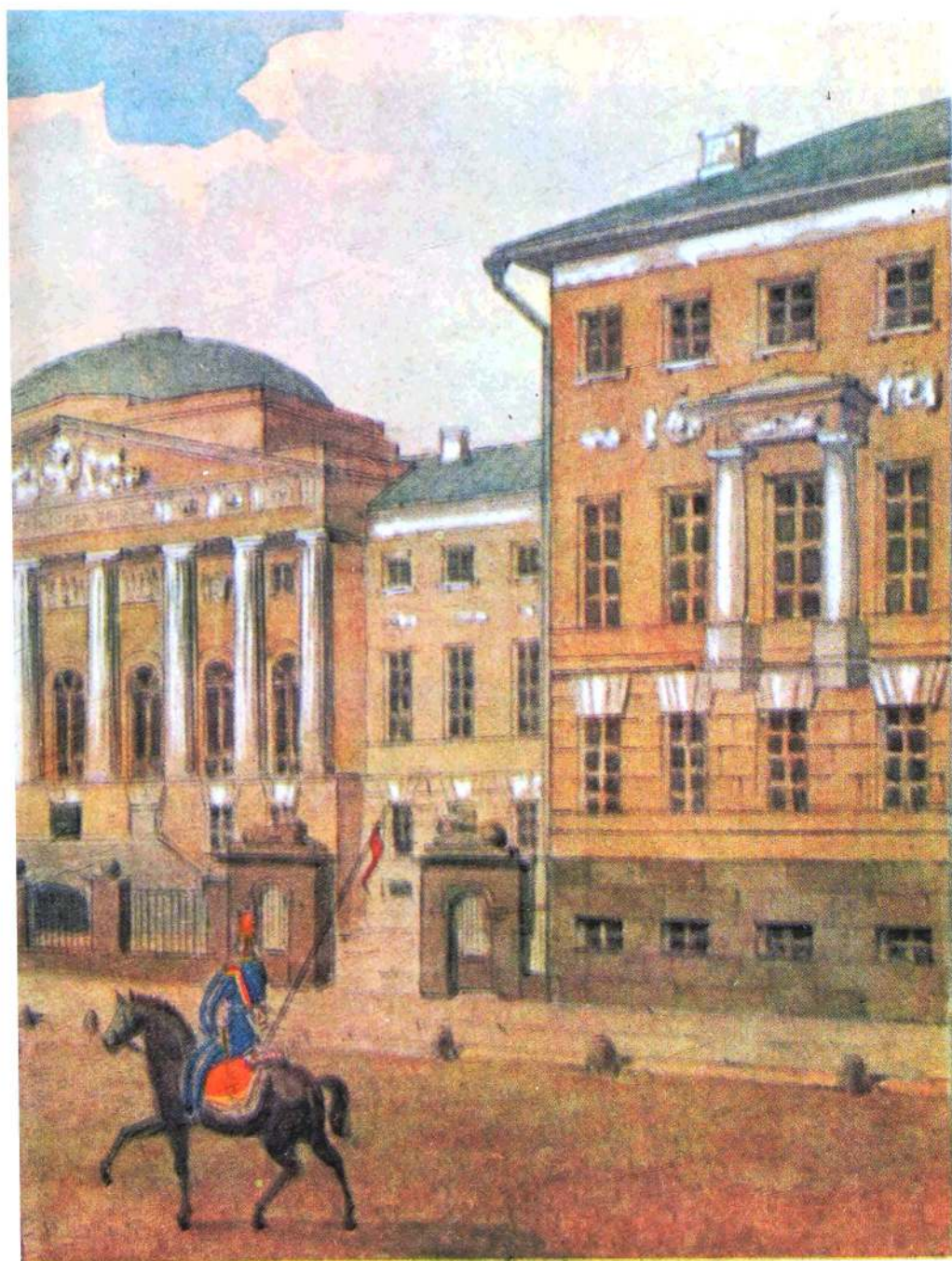
“Wanting to reach the stream that ran
Roaring below, I now began
My steep descent. From ledge I crept
To rocky ledge, by bushes kept,
At which I clutched, from falling; my
Foot would a stone dislodge, and I
Would watch it downward roll, a cloud
Of dust behind it raising. Loud
Its booms were as it, leaping, went
Down, down, the surging billows rent,
And was engulfed. . . . Fearless, I hung
Above the chasm—when one is young
And free, one’s apt to laugh at death! . . .
The bottom gained, I felt the breath
Of mountain waters come to me,
And, o’er them kneeling, greedily
Drank. . . . At the sound of footsteps light,
A voice in song raised, out of sight,
Behind a bush I hid, and there
Crouched in some fear. I did not dare
Look out, but that song my ear drew
And avidly I listened to
Its simple strains. . . . A soft caress
The Georgian maid’s voice held, and, yes,
A freedom and an artlessness,
As if it had been taught to speak
Naught but the names of friends. . . . Though
weak
And ill I lie here, by its sound
Entranced am I and held spellbound.
When dusk steals nigh on silent wings,
To me that song a spirit sings.

XIII

“Along a narrow path that led
Down to the shore, above her head
A jug held high, the Georgian lass
Her way was slowly making. As
I watched, a slippery stone betrayed
Her cautious foot: she stumbled, swayed,
Laughed at herself and haltingly
Walked on. . . . Her clothes were poor, but she
Had pushed her veil back, and the rays
Of sun had gold shades on her face
And bosom traced; a warmth, a glow
Came from her lips and cheeks, and so
Deep and bewitching was her eye,
So full of love’s sweet mystery,
Its secrets, that my heart and mind
Were set aflame, and I turned blind
To all about me. . . . Nothing now
Can I at all recall save how
The water, gurgling, flowed into
The tilted jug, and one or two
Like things. . . . When I my senses had
Regained at last, from me the maid
Was far. . . . The jug’s forbidding weight
Seemed not to burden her: as straight
And graceful as the poplar-tree,
Queen of yon flowering fields, was she! . . .
I watched her slowly walk away. . . .
Up in the hills two huts of clay
Like two fond mates perched side by side;
Glued to the rock they were and hid
In part by haze. . . . Smoke curled up o’er
A low, flat roof. . . . I saw a door
Glide open, then as softly shut. . . .
You know not how I suffered, but
’Tis better so, ’tis for the best—
With me those simple scenes will rest,



Moscow University. The classical colonnade had no equal in the city. The original edifice was designed by Kazakov and built in 1786-98. After the Moscow fire of 1812 it was reconstructed by Giliardi. Watercolour by an unknown early 19th century artist.





Mikhail Lermontov in the uniform of a Hussar of the Imperial Guards. Portrait by Chelyshev. Oils.

XV

“Seized by a kind of mad despair,
I would at moments stop and tear
At thorny shrubs and bushes which
With ivy leaves were twined. The rich,
Luxuriant forest round me spread,
Grew at each step more dense. . . . With dread,
A fear unknown but infinite,
My soul filled, for the eyes of night,
A million hungry eyes, at me
From every side stared wrathfully! . . .
My poor head swam. . . . I climbed a tree,
Another: nigh to heaven’s end
The wood stretched and did, sombre, send
Its toothy shadows over all. . . .
On to the dark grass I did fall
And gnaw at earth’s wet breast, and sear,
And scorch, and burn it with my tears,
Those blazing drops of dew. . . . And yet
I scorned man’s help, and did not let
Myself call out. . . . Had from me wrung
A single cry been, this my tongue,
My feeble tongue, of pity shorn,
From out my mouth I would have torn!

XVI

“Do you recall?—In my young years
I never cried. But now the tears
Poured freely from my eyes: alone
The forest saw them and the moon
That drifted slowly overhead. . . .
Upon a glade that carpeted
With moss and sand was, fell its light. . . .
Thick walls of forest and of night
The glade fenced in. A shadow o’er
It darted suddenly. Before
My startled gaze two lights glowed, and

A huge beast leapt onto the sand.
It was a leopard, dweller of
The wilderness. . . . From out the grove
Emerging thus, he started to
Roll playfully about, and chew,
With growls that almost gay of tone
Seemed, at a juicy piece of bone
He had with him. . . . His long, sleek tail
The beast was wagging, and the pale
Ray of the half-moon gave the sheen
Of silver to his coat. . . . Unseen
By him as yet, a spiky bough
I snatched up, and not knowing how
Soon we would clash, athirst for blood,
Did wait for him to spring, my mood
One of exultancy. . . . Had fate
Not interfered—I hesitate
To say it not—a hero in
My fathers' land I would have been!

XVII

"I waited, and the beast aware
Becoming of my presence there,
Howled, aye, let out a pitiful,
Long-drawn-out wail, of anger full,
Clawed at the sand, then on his hind
Legs for a moment rose, in blind
Fury crouched down. . . . His first wild leap
Might death have spelt—but I did keep
Cool and struck first! Swift was my blow
And sure. The blood began to flow
From his cleft brow. . . . He gave a low
Moan that was like a man's moan, and
Recoiled and fell. . . . I watched him land
Upon his side. . . . The blood did pour
Fast from his wound, and yet once more
The leopard pounced, by pain enraged,
And, hot and fierce, our battle raged!

XVIII

“Before his claws my breast could rip,
My bough I did more firmly grip,
And, plunging it in his throat, twice
The weapon twisted. Loud rang his
Howl o’er the wood. He gave a bound,
And, like two friends their arms around
Each other, or two serpents wound
Into a ball, over the cold,
Dew-sprinkled moss and grass we rolled. . . .
An untamed beast, as wild as my
Foe was I then; his savage cry,
His snarls were echoed by my own.
It was as if I’d only known
Of leopards and of wolves the ways,
Their company, and all my days
Had in the forest spent among
Its dwellers, and the human tongue
Forgot. . . . Within me, deep, was born
The terrifying and forlorn
Call of the wounded beast, and I
No other sound could utter, why
I cannot say. . . . Meanwhile, my foe
Was tiring, and his breath grew slow
And laboured. . . . All at once his hold
On me he tightened, then his gold
Eyes spark-like flashed and closed fore’er. . . .
Yet, this am I prepared to swear:
That death had he in my embrace
Met like a soldier, face to face! . . .

XIX

“Behold—his sharp claws on my breast
Have left their mark, and well impressed
Is’t on the skin. . . . No scars conceal
The ugly prints, and yet, I feel
That death is near and that ’twill heal

Them soon enough. . . . When 'fore me, slain,
My foe lay, I forgot my pain
And wounds and, all unaided, off
Made from the wood. . . . But fate did scoff
And jeer at me, and vainly I
Its will attempted to defy.

XX

"The forest edge I reached when day
The orbs of night had with its ray
Dispersed. . . . The slumbering wood awoke
And rustled softly. . . . Wisps of smoke
Rose in the distance where the lone
Roofs of a hamlet showed. . . . The moan
Of wind now reached me, and, of tone
Harsh, a familiar sound. . . . I sat
And listened. . . . It was faint, and at
That moment, fainter growing, died. . . .
Around me stretched a countryside
I seemed to recognise. . . . Oh no!
It could not be—had fate a blow
So cruel delivered? . . . From my dread
And hated prison had I fled
But to return to it again?
For long, long years, a slave, to pine
For blessed freedom, and then this—
A passing glimpse, a taste of bliss,
And after that, beyond recall,
The grave, and, in it buried, all
My longing for my motherland,
My dreams betrayed and broken, and,
Tinged with both anguish and remorse,
The shame of pity such as yours! . . .
And still to doubt I clung and fought
The voice of truth till my ear caught
Anew the tolling of a bell,
A sound I knew, alas, too well!
From early childhood had that dull

Clanging destroyed the beautiful
Visions that came at times to me
Of my lost home and family,
Of steppeland free, of fiery steeds,
Of valiant and heroic deeds
Performed, and wondrous battles on
Steep mountain pathways waged and won
By me alone! . . . Deep, deep within
Me did the bell sound. . . . Weak of limb
It left me, and bereft of tears:
Was not a hand of iron, fierce,
At my heart pounding without end? . . .
'Twas then that I did comprehend
That what I craved was not to be,
That ne'er would I my birthplace see.

XXI

"Deserve I do my lot, I know. . . .
A steed in alien steppe will throw
His clumsy rider, and, though mute,
Of instinct sure, the shortest route
Find to his stall. . . . Beside him what
Am I? I suffer but cannot
My plight, that does so irk me, change;
My dreams are futile and of strange
Delusions born, the undefined
And frenzied longing of the mind. . . .
My prison had on me its mark
Left: like a plant that in a dark
Cell springs to life, so was I; lone
And sapless, 'twixt two slabs of stone
It slowly sprouts, not daring to
Spread its young leaves, and, pale of hue,
Waits for the sun. . . . Its grief does move
The hand of pity to remove
It to a garden from the gloom
Of dank and murky cell; flowers bloom
About it, all is bliss and cheer

And sweetness. . . . But our prisoner
Cannot survive, and with the rise
Of dawn, 'tis scorched by sun and dies!

XXII

"Like that poor plant burnt was I by
The merciless, stinging sunlight. My
Head vainly did I strive to hide
Beneath the grasses: parched and dried
Their leaves were, and a kind of crown
Of thorns formed that sat strangely on
My aching brow. . . . Into my face
The ground breathed fire. Such was the blaze
And heat of day that bright sparks spun
High up above me, and the sun
Thin shreds of vapour forced the white
Cliffs to give off. All within sight
Lay torpid in the blinding glare:
The heavy sleep of blank despair
God's world bound fast. Not e'en the cry
Of land rail, nor the tiny, dry
Whirr of the gauze-winged dragonfly,
Nor yet the babbling of a brook
The quiet broke. . . . From its dark nook
A snake emerged; the zigzags on
Its gleaming yellow back made one
Think of a blade with lettering
Of gold adorned. . . . Into a ring,
A triple one, it coiled, and stayed
A while thus, bland and undismayed;
Then, as if stung by flame, a start
Gave and began to leap and dart
About in wild and frenzied play. . . .

XXIII

"The skies were tranquil. . . . Far away
Two hills showed black where they the veil

Of haze had pierced; like furbished mail
Behind them shone the turrets tall
Of this old cloister and its wall,
While far below, round isles of green,
The two twin streams snaked, with a gleam
Like that of silver. . . . I could see
Them flowing lightly, rapidly
O'er naked roots and onward run. . . .
I tried to rise—around me spun
The world; I tried to speak—my tongue
Went dry and to my palate clung.
Doomed was I! As the minutes passed,
I knew that gruesome Death had cast
O'er me its shadow; overcome
Was I by dark delirium,
And on the bottom seemed to rest
Of some deep stream. The waves caressed
My face and hands, and o'er me rolled,
And quenched my burning thirst. As cold
The water was as ice and pure. . . .
If but this moment could endure,
I told myself, this calm, this peace,
If only sleep would not drive these
Fond dreams away! . . . The light that through
The water seeped as soft and blue
And tender as the moon's became,
The harsh beams turning strangely tame
And mellow. . . . Near me, to and fro,
Bright fish did flit and fairly glow
With colour. . . . Silent and entranced,
I watched them. One fish frisked and danced
Just o'er my head. Fine scales of gold
Did cover it. . . . Against me, bold,
Now and again it brushed in play
And did its friendliness display
In like frank way. Its gaze met mine,
And, lo!—its silvery voice and thin
In song it raised. Full of content

I listened to't, and wonderment:
A strange song 'twas, and tinged with pain;
Now 'twould break off, now start again. . . .

'Come, stay with me,' it went, 'and you'll
Regret it not, my dear.
Calm are these watery wastes and cool,
In freedom live we here.

'We'll dance, my sisters fair and I,
A gay dance for a start,
And drive the sadness from your eye,
The darkness from your heart.

'Sleep, dear one! Soft and downy is
Your bed of sand and grass.
The fleeting years and centuries
In dulcet dreams will pass.

'I love you, love, the way I do
These rolling waves and free.
As precious and as dear are you
As life itself to me.'

I listened patiently and long:
The water's murmur with the song
Sung by the goldfish seemed to blend. . . .
Then, without warning, to an end
Came these odd dreams, the light of noon
Faded away, and in a swoon,
Oblivious to all, I lay. . . .

XXIV

"'Twas there they found me. . . . I will say
No more, you know the rest. If you,
Whose sympathy I need not woo,
Believe me not, 'tis all the same
To me, but sorely grieved I am

By one thing: that my body will
In alien soil lie, cold and still,
That words writ by some stranger on
My grave will wake response in none,
And that to my dark fate and name
All will indifferent remain.

XXV

“Adieu! . . . Our parting let us seal
With hand-clasp, Father. Can you feel
How hot my hand is and how dry? . . .
Know this: a fire has e’er in my
Breast lurked from youth, and in its greed
Devoured its captor—flesh, and freed
The spirit that must soon return
To one who does mete out, in turn,
To each of us, now pain, now peace. . . .
But think not that I seek release
From worldly chains, my old friend—Nay!
Exchange I would for one short day,
For less, for but one hour amid
The jagged rocks where play I did,
A child, if ’twere but offered me,
Both Heaven and eternity! . . .

XXVI

“When comes my end, for which to wait
Not long remains, for so has fate
Ordained, pray, have me taken to
The garden, to the spot where two
Acacia bushes grow, and lush
The grass is, and with golden brush
The sun the leaves tints, and the air
Is clear and heady. . . . Place me there,
Beneath that blue and boundless sky,
So that I may before I die
My eyes feast on the luminous,

Light-nourished day. . . . The Caucasus
From that spot can be seen, and will
Send me their last farewell, the chill
Breeze using for a messenger,
And my heart with the dear sounds stir
Of home, and make me think that by
My side my brother, as I lie
There quietly, or else an old
And trusted friend sits, and the cold
Drops patient wiping from my face,
In hushed tones sings a song of praise
To our dear homeland, his and mine. . . .
With thought of it I'll sleep, and in
The moment 'fore oblivion
Curse no man and disparage none!"

1839

THE DEMON

An Eastern Legend

Part I

I

His way above the sinful earth
The melancholy Demon winged
And memories of happier days
About his exiled spirit thronged;
Of days when in the halls of light
He shone among the angels bright;
When comets in their headlong flight
Would joy to pay respect to him
As, chaste among the cherubim,
Among th' eternal nebulae
With eager mind and quick surmise
He'd trace their caravanserai
Through the far spaces of the skies;
When he had known both faith and love,
The happy firstling of creation!
When neither doubt nor dark damnation
Had whelmed him with the bitterness
Of fruitless exile year by year,
And when so much, so much . . . but this
Was more than memory could bear.

II

Outcast long since, he wandered lone,
Having no place to call his own,
Through the dull desert of the world
While age on age about him swirled,
Minute on minute—all the same.

Prince of this world—which he held cheap—
He scattered tares among the wheat. . . .
A joyless task without remission,
Void of excitement, opposition—
Evil itself to him seemed tame.

III

And so—exiled from Paradise—
He soared above the peaks of ice
And saw the everlasting snows
Of Kazbek and the Caucasus,
And, serpentine, the winding deeps
Of that black, dragon-haunted pass
The Daryal gorge; then the wild leaps
Of Terek like a lion bounding
With mane of tangled spray that blows
Behind him, and a great roar sounding
Through all the hills, where beast and bird
On mountain scree and azure steeps
The river's mighty voice had heard;
And, as he flew, the golden clouds
Streaked from the South in tattered shrouds. . .
Companions on his Northbound course;
And the great cliffs came crowding in
And brooded darkly over him
Exuding some compelling force
Of somnolence above the stream. . .
And on the cliff-tops castles reared
Their towered heads and baleful stared
Out through the mists—wardens who wait
Colossal at the mighty gate
Of Caucasus—and all about
God's world lay wonderful and wild. . .
But the proud Spirit looked with doubt
And cool contempt on God's creation,
His brow unruffled and serene
Admitting no participation.

193.22

Демонъ.

Сл. поема. Д.

Мининъ и Пожаровъ въ
своемъ великомъ подвиге въ
нашей родине. Москва
издательство "Дружба
нашихъ дней"

1934



IV

Before him now another scene
In vivid beauty blooms.
The patterned vales' luxuriant green
Spread like a carpet on the looms
Of Georgia, rich and blessed ground!
These poplars like great pillars tower,
And sounding streams trip over pebbles
Of many colours in their courses,
And, ember-bright, the rose trees flower
Where nightingales forever warble
To marble beauties fond discourses
Forever deaf to their sweet sound.
On sultry days the timid deer
Seek out an ivy-curtained cave
To hide them from the midday heat;
How bright, how live the leaves are here!
A hundred voices soft conclave
A thousand flower-hearts that beat!
The sensuous warmth of afternoon,
The scented dew which falls to strew
The grateful foliage "neath the moon,
The stars that shine as full and bright
As Georgian beauties' eyes by night! . . .
Yet in the outcast's barren breast
Abundant nature woke no new
Upsurge of forces long at rest,
Touched off no other sentiment
Than envy, hatred, cold contempt.

V

Right high the house, right wide the court
Grey-haired Gudáal has builded him. . .
In tears and labour dearly bought
By slaves submissive to his whim.
Across the neighbouring cliffs its shade
From sunrise dark and cool is laid
A steep stair in the cliff-face hewn

Leads from the corner-tower down
To the Aragva. Down this stair
Princess Tamara, young and fair,
Goes gleaming, snow white veils a-flutter,
To fetch her jars of river water.

VI

In austere silence heretofore
The house has looked across the valleys;
But now wide open stands the door
Gudáal holds feast to mark the marriage
Of his Tamara: now the wine
Flows freely and the zurná skirls;
The clan is gathered round to dine
And on the roof-top, richly spread
With orient rugs, the promised bride
Sits all amongst her laughing girls:
In games and songs their time is sped
And merriment. Beyond the hills
The semicircle of the sun
Has sunk already. Now the fun
Grows fast and furious. Now the steady
Rhythmic clapping and the singing
The bride brings to her feet, poised ready,
Her tambourine above her head
Is circling, she herself goes winging
Bird-light above rug, then stops,
Looks round, and lets her lashes drop
That envious hide her shining glance;
And now she raises raven brows,
Now suddenly sways forward slightly
Her slender foot peeps out, and lightly
It slides and swims into the dance;
And see she smiles—a joyous gleam
Aglow with childish merriment.
And yet . . . the white moon's sportive beam
In rippling water liquid bent
With such a smile could scarce compare
More live than life, than youth more fair.

VII

So by the midnight star I swear
By blazing East and beaming West
No Shah of Persia knew her peer
No King on earth was ever blessed
To kiss an eye so full and fine.
The harem's sparkling fountain never
Showered such a form with dewy pearls!
Nor had mortal fingers ever
Caressed a forehead so divine
To loose such splendid curls;
Indeed, since Eve was first undone
And man from Eden forth must fare
No beauty such as this, I swear,
Had bloomed beneath the Southern sun.

VIII

So now for the last time she danced
Alas! Tomorrow, she, the heir
Of old Gudáal, the daughter fair
Of liberty must bow her head
To a slave's fate like one entranced,
Adopt a country not her own,
A family she'd never known—
Often a secret doubt would shed
A shadow on her radiant face;
Yet all her movements were so free
Appealing, redolent of grace
So full of sweet simplicity
That, had the Demon soaring high
Above looked down and chanced to see...
Then, mindful of his former race,
He had turned from her—with a sigh. . . .

IX

The Demon *did* see. . . . For one second
It seemed to him that heaven beckoned
To make his arid soul resound

With glorious, grace-bestowing sound—
And once again his thought embraced
The sacrosanct significance
Of Goodness, Beauty and of Love!
And, strangely moved, his memory traced
The joys that he had known above
A chain of long magnificence
Before him link on link unfolding
As though he watched the headlong flight
Of star on star shoot through the night....
And, long the touching scene beholding,
Held spell-bound by some Power unseen,
New sadness in his heart awoke.
Then, suddenly, emotion spoke
In accents once familiar;
Could this yet be regeneration?
The subtle promptings of temptation
Had gone as though they had not been...
Oblivion?—God gave this not yet:—
Nor would he, if he could, forget!...

X

Meanwhile, his galant steed all lathered
Hastening to join his kin forgathered
To celebrate his wedding day
The bridegroom made his urgent way....
Good fortune yet attended him
To bright Aragva's verdant bank.
A line of camels after him
So weighted down with costly gifts
They scarce from hoof to hoof could shift
Wound down the pathway, rank on rank,
Now clear to view, now lost to sight,
Bells chiming softly as they plod.
Their master rode on in the van
To guide his laden caravan
That followed where his horse had trod....
Erect, the lithe waste girdled tight;



Varenka Lopukhina. A rhapsodical girl who, contemporaries said, had "a mind as clear as day", was 15 when Lermontov first made her acquaintance. Many of his poems are dedicated to her, and she is his Vera in *The Hero of Our Time*. Lermontov painted this portrait in watercolours in 1835, and later made a gift of it to Varenka.



Natalia Fyodorovna Ivanova. When Lermontov was 17, he dedicated some beautiful poems to this young lady, addressing her as N.F.I. Portrait by Binneman.



Alexandra Mikhailovna Vereshchagina—Lermontov's childhood friend.
Miniature by an unknown painter.

Sabre and dagger-hilts shine bright
Beneath the sun; and on his back
A gleaming rifle, notched in black.
The wind is fluttering the sleeve
Of his *chukhá*—all bravely braided
His saddle-cloth of richest weave,
The saddle with gay silks is broiderèd
The reigns are tasseled—and his steed
Is of a priceless, golden breed.
Nostrils dilated, twitching ears
He glances down and snorts his fears
Of the deep drop, the flying foam
That crests the rapids' leaping waves.
How perilous the path they follow,
The cliff o'erhangs the way so narrow,
The deep ravine the torrent paves.
The hour is late. —The sunset glow
Is fading on the peaks of snow.
The caravan makes haste for home.

XI

But see—a chapel by the way. . . .
Here now has rested many a day
Some prince, now canonized, but then
By vengeful hand untimely slain.—
And here the traveller must stay
Whether he haste to fight, or whether
To join the feast, here he must ever
Rein in his horse and humbly pray
The good saint to protect his life
Against the lurking Moslem's knife.
But now the bridegroom, overbold,
Forgot his forefathers of old
And, by perfidious dreams misled
Of how, beneath the cloak of night,
He would embrace his bride, instead
Of holding by their pious rite
He yielded to the Demon's will

Seduced by turbid thoughts—until
Two figures—then a shot—ahead
What was it? Rising in his stirrups
Cramming his high hat on his brow
The gallant lover, at the gallop,
Plunged like a hawk upon his foe!
No word he spoke, his whip cracked once
And once blazed forth his Turkish gun....
Another shot. Wild cries. The Prince
Goes thundering on. The groans behind
Long echoes in the valley find....
Not long the fight. Of timorous mind,
The Georgians turn and run!

XII

Now all is silence; sadly huddled
The camels stand and stare befuddled
Upon their erstwhile master—man,
Lying dead amongst these silent fells.
The only sound their harness bells,
Ravaged and robbed their caravan;
And see, the owl flies softly round
The Christian bodies on the ground!
No peaceful tomb beneath the stones
Of some old church will take these bones
Like those in which their fathers lie;
Mothers nor sisters will not come
In their long floating veils to cry
Over these graves so far from home!
Instead, by zealous hands, a cross
Was raised to mark the dreadful loss
Just where the road hugs close the sheer
And towering cliff-wall, close to where
They perished in the raid....
And ivy, growing lush in Spring,
An emerald net about it flings....
Here, weary of the toilsome road,

The traveller yet lays down his load
To rest in God's good shade. . . .

XIII

Swift as a stag still runs the horse
Snorting as though he held his course
In some fierce charge, now plunging on
Now pulling up as though to harken
His nostrils flared to sniff the wind;
Then leaps up and comes ringing down
On all four hooves, sets sparking
The stones and, in his mad career,
His tangled mane streams out behind.
A silent rider he does bear
Who lurches forward now and then
To rest his head in that wild mane.
The reins lie slack in useless hands,
The feet are deep-thrust in the stirrups,
And on his saddle-cloth the bands
Of blood are broadening as they gallop
Ah gallant steed, your wounded master
You bore from battle swift as light
The ill-starred bullet sped yet faster
And overtook him in the night!

XIV

Gudáal's is now a house of mourning,
The people crowd into the court:
Whose horse comes galloping in terror
To fall before the rock-hewn gate?
The lifeless rider, who is he?
The battle fury on his face
Has left a deep inscribed trace
On coat and weapons they could see
Fresh bloodstains, and a wiry strand
Of mane was twisted in his hand,
Not long you waited, youthful bride,
And looked to see your bridegroom come:

Alas, though he has gained your side
To join the feasting at your home
His princely word he keeps in vain. . .
Never will he mount horse again.

XV

Like thunder, the Lord's judgement broke
About this unsuspecting house!
Tamara, sobbing on her couch,
Gives free rein to the heavy tears
Till, shaken, she on them must choke. . . .
Then, suddenly, it seems she hears
Above her words of wonder spoke:
"Weep not, my child! Weep not in vain!
Those tears are no life-giving rain
To call an unresponsive corse
Back to the living world again.
They only serve to dull their source
In those clear eyes, those cheeks to burn. . . .
And he is far and will not learn
Of all your bitter sorrow now;
The winds of heaven now caress
His high, angelic brow;
And heavenly music, heavenly light. . . .
What are the dreams and dark duress,
The little hopes and stifled sighs
Of earthly maidens in the sight
Of one who dwells in paradise?
Ah no, the lot of mortal man,
Believe, my earthly angel dear,
It merits not one second's span
Your precious sorrow here.

"On the wastes of airy ocean
Rudderless and stripped of sail
Through the mists in listless motion
Stars in courses never fail;
Through the boundless fields of heaven
Traceless pass the fluffy sheep—

Clouds dissolving in the even
Reaches of the azure steppe.
Hour of parting, hour of meeting,
Brings them neither joy nor sorrow;
Nor regrets for past fast fleeting;
Nor desires for any morrow.
Let remembrance day be only
One long sorrow-laden day;
For the rest, be strong and lonely
Free of earthly cares as they!

“As soon as night has spread her veil
To cover the Caucasian heights;
As soon as nature 'neath the spell
Of magic words falls silent quite;
As soon as on the cliffs the wind
Runs rustling through the fading grass,
And the small bird that hides behind
The brittle blades flies up at last;
And, drinking in the evening dew
Beneath the vine-leaves in the gloom,
Night flowering blossoms come to bloom;
As soon as the great, golden moon
Above the mountain quietly peeps
To steal a stealthy glance at you;
I shall come flying to watch your sleep
And on your silken lashes lay
Enchanted dreams of golden day. . . .”

XVI

And softly as a strange delusion
The voice fell silent, sound on sound.
The maid sprang up and gazed around,
An inexpressible confusion
Within her breast;—sorrow nor fear
Nor ecstasy could now compare
With this great upsurge of emotion.
The soul from its fast fetters broke
And burning fire coursed through her veins

It seemed as though the voice still spoke
Unknown and wonderful—and then
The sleep she craved came down to bless
Her weary eyes with heaviness;
But now he troubled even her thought
With dreams prophetic and unsought:
A stranger, mist-enshrouded, stood
Beside her bed and spoke no word
But, glimmering with unearthly beauty,
He looked at her with quiet devotion
And sadly, as it were in pity.
But this was not her guardian angel,
No visitant from realms divine:
About his head no radiant halo
Upon the shadowy curls did shine
Nor was it some tormented sprite
Some vicious spirit of hell—ah no!
Neither of darkness nor of light! . . .
More like the gentle afterglow
As evening deepens into night! . . .

Part II

I

“Ah, father, father, leave your threats
Scold not your daughter yet again.
For see these tears! I’m weeping yet
You know full well since when
The suitors come to seek my hand
From all the corners of the land. . . .
As though in Georgia only one
Young maid there were they’d have as bride. . . .
But I—I can be wife to none! . . .
Oh, father, father, do not chide,
You see yourself—a poison slow
Envenoms all my waking thought
The evil one won’t let me go

By overwhelming dreams distraught
I fade and perish utterly!
Have pity, let your foolish girl
Seek refuge in a monastery
There, if I can but take the veil
The saviour will take care of me
And I shall tell Him all my woe.
The world, I know it all too well,
Holds nothing for me: let a cell
In twilit shadow shelter me. . .
As in a grave—precociously. . .”

II

And so Tamara's family
To a far convent brought their child,
And there in all humility
In hair-shirt rough the maiden mild
Enrobed her youthful breast.
Yet in this harsh, monastic garb
Her troubled heart found no more rest
From dreams forbidden and debarred
Than clad in velvet or brocade.
Before the altar at the hour,
Of shining candles, solemn prayer,
Through the sweet chanting of the choir
Familiar speech would reach her ear
And there, beneath the cupola,
A well-known figure would appear
To glide by as the incense rose. . . .
Soundless, he leaves no trace, but goes
Gleaming before her like a star
Calling and beckoning afar
But whither? Ah, that no one knows.

III

The holy convent was secluded
In a cool glen between two hills
By poplars and acacias ringed. . . .

And, when the night sank weary-winged
To rest in the ravine, the grills
Of the young sister's cell would gleam
Out through their foliage fitfully.
Without, beneath the almond tree
In whose thin shade dark crosses brooded
Like silent watchers on the graves,
The merry birds made sweet conclaves
Of melody. The spring-cold streams
Leapt down from rock to rock, and sang,
Then merged beneath the overhang
To foam away in rapid rushes
Beneath the frosty-flowering bushes. . . .

IV

Way to the north there was a view,
A glimpse of mountains. At day's dawning,
When curling mists of smoky blue
Rose from the hollows of the hills,
And from his minaret the priest,
His face towards the brightening East,
Called all his flock to prayer at morning,
Then, too, the trembling resonance
Of chapel bells awoke the cloister;
The solemn hour did but enhance
The stillness of the place, the calm. . . .
Tamara at this hour came forth
Bearing a pitcher on one arm
And, treading where the mists grew lighter
Down the steep hillside stepped for water.
The snowy summits to the North
Showed violet against the sky
And flung a cloak of rosier dye
About their shoulders in the evening;
And there between them, upheaving
His head between the clouds, their Tsar,
Kazbek, in robes of silver weaving,
Towered up towards the polar star.

V

Yet, full of tainted thoughts, her mind
Is shuttered to such pure delights,
And all her heart is filled with night
The whole world shadowed and unkind.
And morning ray and evening dark
Serve only to ignite the spark
Of further torment in her soul.
And, as the sweet, nocturnal cool
Over the thirsty earth came seeping,
Almost demented, she would fall
Before the sacred icon weeping;
And in the silence of the night
Her heavy sobbing would affright
The traveller upon his course;
“A mountain spirit”, he’d surmise
“Bound in some cavern moaning lies!”
And hustle on his weary horse. . . .

VI

So, filled with longing and unease,
Tamara would sit long and gaze
Engrossed in lonely meditation
All day, and sigh with expectation
Beside her window, staring out. . . .
That he would come she had no doubt,
Why else then were her dreams so clear?
Why else then used he to appear
With eyes so infinitely sad
And speech so marvellously tender?
For many days on end she had
Been strangely moved—she knew not why. . . .
She called the good saints to defend her
But in her heart she called on him;
And always, when the day grew dim,
Weary with staring, she would lie
Down on her bed and try to sleep:
The pillow burnt her flaming cheek

Fear stifled her, she gasped for breath,
 Then, from her pallet she would leap
 With heaving shoulders, fevered breast
 Trembling, a mist before her sight,
 Her arms outstretched to clasp the night,
 The kisses melting on her lips. . .

.

VII

The Georgian hills were scarcely veiled
 In the transparent dusk of evening
 Before the Demon downward sailed
 Through the grey twilight wreathing
 For long and long, though powerfully
 The convent seemed to draw him, he
 Could not make up his mind to break
 That hallowed peace. . . . One moment more
 And he was ready to forsake
 His cruel intent. Beyond the door
 He paced beneath the circling wall
 Absorbed in thought. The shadowy leaves
 Shook at his steps without a breeze
 He raised his eyes: a quivering light
 Throbbled from her window through the night.
 So, she was waiting—and awake!
 Through the soft silence all about
 The chingar thrummed harmoniously
 And over them a song rang out
 A song that poured mellifluously
 Like tears that fall in measure slow,
 A song so tender that at times
 It seemed as though in loftier climbs
 It had been made for earth below.
 Some angel, maybe, had descended
 To seek a being he'd once befriended
 To bring him secret consolation,
 To ease his pain, past bliss recall.

Love's anguish and love's exaltation
Now held the Demon fast in thrall
For the first time; he would have flown
But his great wings were turned to stone!
A miracle! His eyes are dim
And down his cheek there rolls one tear....
Now, to this day, the stones still bear
The fiery traces of its falling...
A tear of flame, a trace appalling,
But not a human tear!

VIII

And so he came, prepared to give
His heart in love, his soul to light.
He thought the time had come to live
A new life on this longed-for night.
As though at a first assignation
The proud soul felt a strange, shy thrill,
A shuddering, timid expectation:
It was a sign that boded ill!
He entered, looked around. Before him
The lovely sinner's Guardian stood,
Heaven's messenger, bright cherubim,
With smiling lips and brow of flame.
So, the fell enemy forestalling,
The brilliant spirit of the Good
Had gathered her beneath his wing.
The Demon looked for tender greeting—
But light divine upon him beating
And stern rebuke upon him came:

IX

"Spirit of idleness and sin,
At this dark hour who called you? say!
You have no servants here within
These sacred walls, nor to this day

Has breath of evil visited
 This charge of mine, to you forbid. . . .
 Who called you?" —Subtly in reply
 The Demon smiled but in him woke
 The ancient hate of hell. His eye
 Flashed fiery-jealous as he spoke
 Upon the messenger divine:
 "Leave her!" he said. "For she is mine!
 Too late you came, good guardian—see
 You are no judge of such as we
 For her proud heart belongs to me.
 No charge is she of powers above
 Here I am lord, and here I love!—"

Sad-eyed, the angel bent his glance
 Upon the evil spirit's prey
 Then slowly flapped his great wings once
 And through the ether soared away.

.

X

Tamara

Who are you? You are perilous
 Say—are you come from heaven or hell?
 What do you want?

The Demon

What loveliness!

Tamara

But speak, who are you? You must tell.

The Demon

I am he to whom you harkened
 In the stillness of the night,
 He whose thought your mind has darkened,

He whose sadness you have felt,
Whose image haunts your waking sight,
Whose name the end of hope has spelt
To every soul with whom I treat.
I am he no man may love,
A scourge to all my mortal slaves,
The ill in nature. Enemy
To Heaven and all the powers above.
Lord of knowledge, liberty.
And, as you see, I'm at your feet.
Moved beyond all that I have known
I would speak softly in your ears
Quiet prayers of love. Tell of my pain,
My first on earth, and my first tears.
Ah hear me out, for pity's sake!
One word from you would quite restore me.
Robed in the love of your pure heart
I might again resume my part
In the angelic ranks and take
An aspect new and a new glory.
Ah, hear me, hear me I implore you,
I am your slave and I adore you!
No sooner did I see you than
I felt a sudden, veiled revulsion
For immortality and power;
And I was drawn by strange compulsion
To envy the frail joys of man;
Life without you became a torment
To be apart from you—a horror.
A living ray of warmth, a portent
Of fair renewal touched my heart
And set the cold blood coursing. Sorrow
Beneath the scar stirred like a serpent
Awakening an ancient pain.
For, tell me, without you what gain
Is there in my infinity?
Endless dominion, majesty?
Loud, empty words—a spacious fane
Devoid of all divinity!

Tamara

Leave me, false spirit of deceit
Be silent, for I will not trust
The Enemy. Ah God . . . some sweet
Insistent poison saps resolve—
I cannot say the prayer I must—
Your words are fire and I dissolve
And melt in them. I cannot see. . . .
But say: how came you to love me?

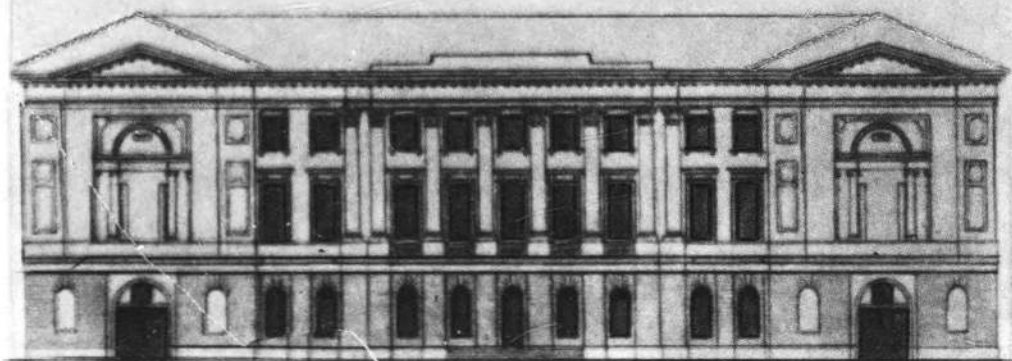
The Demon

How, lovely one?—I do not know,
My life is wondrous full and new,
The crown of thorns I proudly cast
With my own hands from off my brow.
All that I have been shattered lies:
My heaven and hell are in your eyes.
I love you with a passion vast.
You cannot love as I love you,
With all the ecstasy and power
Of deathless thought and dreams sublime.
Since the beginning of all time
Your image on the eternal air
Has gone before me—till this hour.
My soul has long been troubled by
The sweet sounds of the name you bear;
And in my days of blessedness
You were my only lack. If only
You could but understand the lonely
Embittered boredom of existence
When, century on century,
Alone in suffering and joy
In evil meeting no resistance,
For good receiving no reward,
Enclosed in self, by self most bored,
A never-ending war to wage
Past hope to triumph or destroy
Past hope of making peace again!

To pity where I would desire,
To know all things from age to age,
Seek hatred's all-consuming fire
And nought to find but cool disdain!
For since God's curse upon me came
All natural ardours have grown cold.
I saw my fellow-stars arrayed
In wedding garments as of old;
Through azure space before me flowing
They passed me by in crowns of flame;
And yet . . . of these, my one-time brothers,
Not one would recognise me now.
So, in despair, I called on others,
Outcasts like me, to join my growing
Battalions, but—I know not how—
In their embittered words and faces,
In their dark looks I in my turn
Knew no one. Then in terror I
Beat with my wings the earth to spurn
And launched myself into the sky,
And flew, and flew. . . . Whither? For why?
I do not know. . . . By friends rejected,
Like those from Eden's gates ejected,
I saw the whole world pale and dim.
Abandoned to the current's whim,
Even so without a sail, may float
A rudderless and broken boat
Upon the surface of the sea
Knowing nor course nor destiny;
So, in the early morning hour,
Abandoned by some passing shower
Of thunderous rain, a lonely cloud
Black through the azure heights of heaven
May wander lost without a haven
Leaving no trace upon the ether
God only knows from whence—or whither!
For a short while myself I vowed
To teaching sin and spreading doubt
Of all things noble, all things fair.

But not for long . . . mankind I wrenched
Too easily to my fell will.
The flame of faith, too easy quenched,
Left me triumphant, but without
An object worthy of my skill.
To mislead hypocrites and fools . . .
What profit was there for me there?
I hid away in mountains far
And wandered like a displaced star
In lonely, never ending flight:
And when some traveller belated
Would follow, deeming me a light
In some near dwelling; I would lead
Him to the cliff-edge . . . hear the hated
Voice call up from the abyss . . .
And leave him—and his horse—to bleed. . . .
Yet all too soon I tired of this
And other spiteful, sombre sports!
How often, raising storms of stones,
And, clad in mists and lightening,
I would go hurtling through the cloud
To cow the spirit of the crowd,
Rebellious upshoots frightening,
Drowning their murmuring in my groans,
Seeking escape from pursuant thoughts,
Seeking to expunge from memory
Things that may not forgotten be!
What is the tale of miseries,
The labours and the pains of man
Throughout the passing centuries,
Compared to but one minute's span
Of my great, unacknowledged anguish?
What of mankind?—their works and sorrow?
Here today—and gone tomorrow. . . .
Then—they have hope in judgement just;
He may forgive, although He must
At first condemn them. I shall languish
Unshriven throughout eternity. . . .
My torment has no end, like me,

ФАСАДЪ ДОМА ЧЕРНЫШЕВА
Facade de la maison Tchernichoff



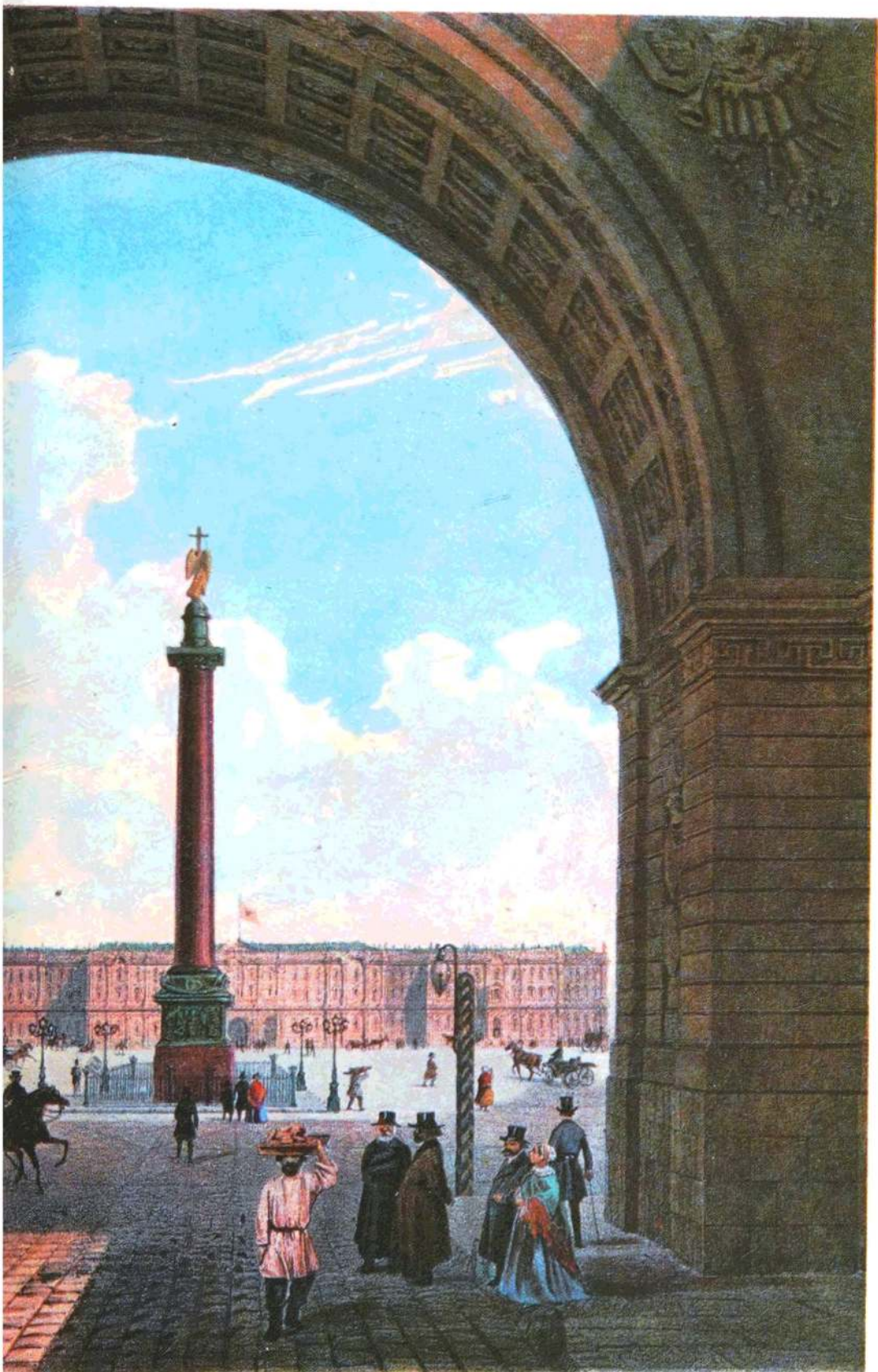
St. Petersburg. The building belonging to Chernyshev housed the Cadet School where Lermontov studied. The appearance of the original building is known to us only from the architect's drawings.



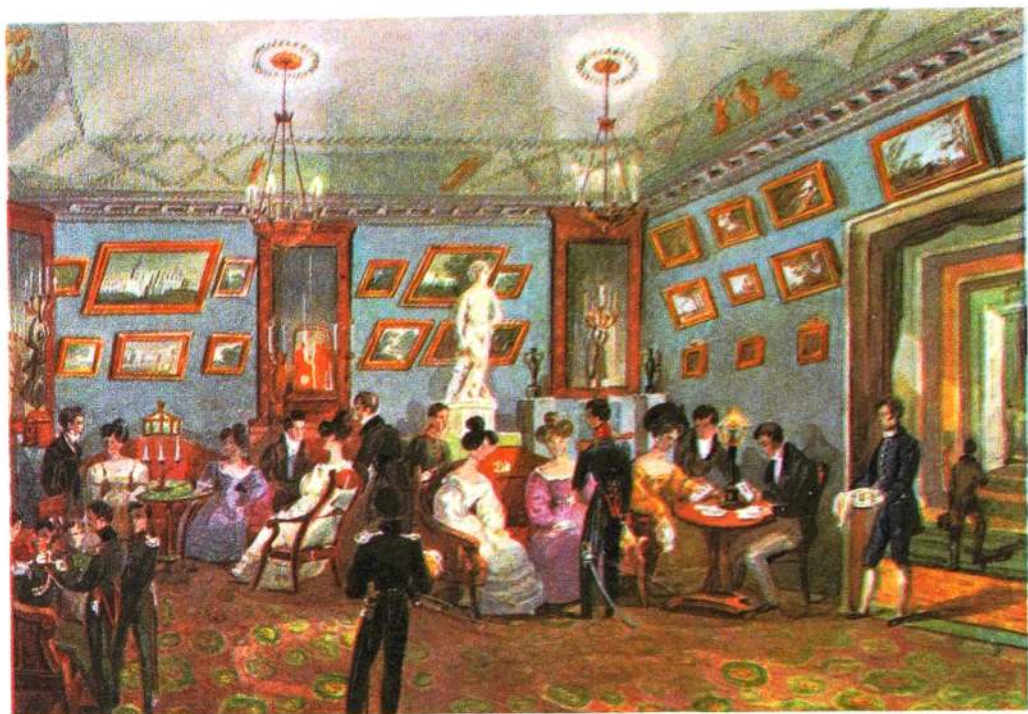
A bivouac of the Hussar Regiment of the Imperial Guards near Krasnoye Selo. On graduation from the Cadet School, Mikhail Lermontov received a commission in this regiment. The picture was done by him in watercolours in 1835.



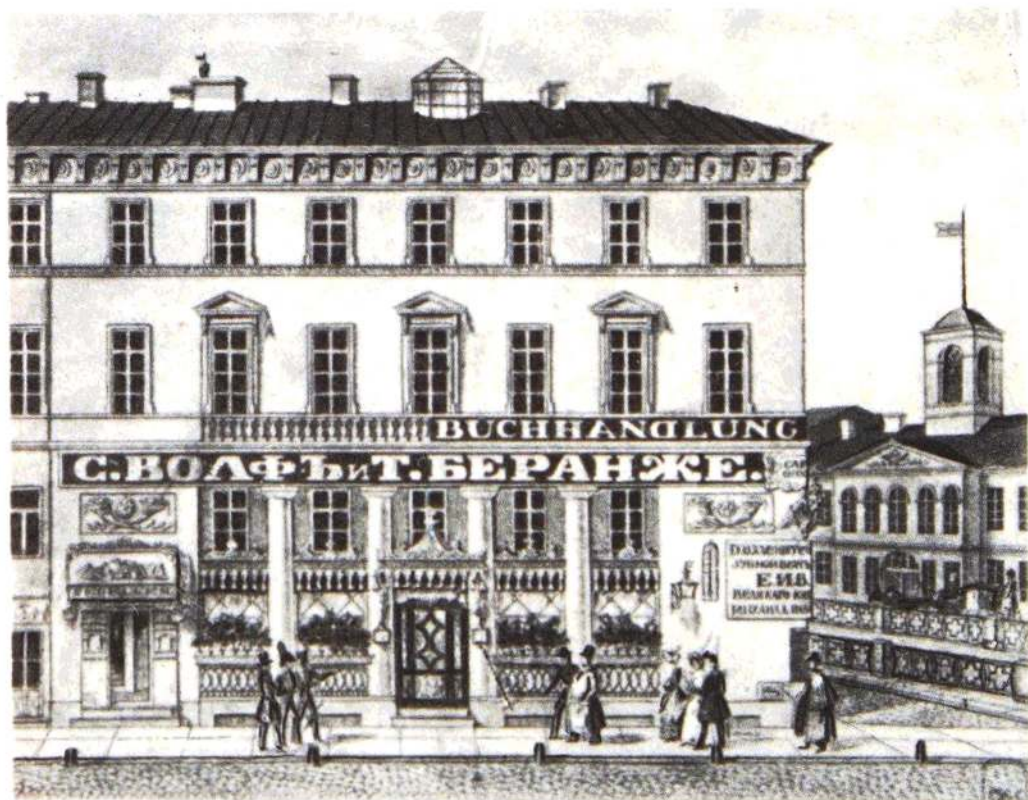
St. Petersburg. The Arch of the General Staff building. Mikhail Lermontov, arrested for the poem he had written on the death of Pushkin, was kept in solitary confinement in one of the top-floor rooms. He wrote his poems *When I Looked at the Mountains* and *When I Looked at the Mountains*.



Comes a Gentle Breeze... and *The Captive* with a match dipped in wine and soot on paper in which the bread brought for him was wrapped. An early 19th century lithograph.



An evening party at one of St. Petersburg's aristocratic houses. Watercolour by an unknown early 19th century painter.



St. Petersburg. Nevsky Prospekt. Wolf and Beranger Cafe. A favourite haunt of the Cadets. Lermontov's poem *On the Death of the Poet* was passed round here and copied by hand, and it was also here that Pushkin met d'Anzas, his second on the day of the fatal duel. An early 19th century lithograph.

And, deathless, it must ever wake,
Now creeping closer like a snake,
Now caustic, burning to the bone,
Now dull and heavy like a stone—
To live—the everlasting tomb
Of hope and passion is my doom! . . .

Tamara

What part have I in all this wild
And sorry tale? Why should I own
To pity? You have sinned. . . .

Demon

My child,
Against you?

Tamara

Hush!

Demon

We are alone

Tamara

And God!

Demon

Will not spare us a thought
Heaven, not earth, is his first care.

Tamara

The pains of hell, as we are taught?

Demon

What of them? I'll be with you there!

Tamara

Who e'er you are, my chance-met friend,
You, who have stolen my peace of mind,
Reluctantly, yet deeply moved,
I hear how you have suffered, loved...
Yet if you speak but to mislead
Yet if you lie— in part or whole—
Have mercy on me—For what need
Can you have of my maiden soul?
Surely 'tis not to heaven more dear
Than all those you have overlooked.
They too are beautiful and pure...
As here, no mortal hand was brooked
Their chaste couch to contaminate....
No! Swear to me a binding oath...
But say, —you see it all; how, loth
To cleanse the sweet fear from my heart,
I dream as women will; and start
Again in fear that you know all....
You have seen all and understood
And surely must be merciful!
Come, swear to me to leave behind
All evil wishes from this hour
Are there no oaths of lasting power,
No sacred promises you could
Swear to me now that should you bind?

Demon

By the first day of the creation
And by its latest day I swear,
By God's law and its violation
The triumph of eternal truth,
The bitter shame of sin I bear;
By the brief glory of this dream
I swear, and by our meeting here
And by the threat of separation;
I swear by all the spirit hosts

Whom Fate has set at my command,
On swords divine I take my oath
As wielded by my enemies
The impassive, sleepless angel band;
I swear by you, your life, your death,
Your last, long look and your first tear,
The gentle drawing of your breath,
The silken torrents of your hair;
I swear by suffering and bliss,
I swear even by this love of ours,—
I have renounced all vengefulness
I have renounced the pride of years;
From this day forth no false temptation
Will rise to trouble any soul;
I look for reconciliation,
I look for love, for adoration,
I look for faith in Higher Good.
And by a tear of true contrition
I'll wipe away the fiery trace
Of wroth divine from off a face
More worthy of you. May the whole
Wide world in calm rusticity
Bloom on, all unaware of me!
Believe me, I alone have vision
To love you: I have understood
Your greatness as no other could:
You are my holy one. This day
My power at your feet I lay.
And for your love one moment long
I'll give you all eternity.
For I am changeless, true and strong
In love as in malignity
Free spirit of the air, I'll bear you
High up above the stars to where you
Will reign in splendour as my queen,
Tamara, first love of my dream,
And you will come to look on earth
Without regret, without compassion
Unhappy planet, with its dearth

Of lasting beauty, with its fashion
For petty sentiments, small minds,
Where crime and executions grind
Their everlasting wheel of fear:
Men fear to love and fear to hate.
Or know you not what love is here?
The seething of young blood in spate—
But days go by and blood grows cold!
Who can resist the long temptation
Of boredom, change and novelty?
What love can outlive separation
Or rival dream's variety?
No! Not for *my* love to grow old
And fade in silence in the crude
Society of jealous slaves
Amidst ungenerous and cold
Pretended friends and real foes,
Burdened by useless works and rude
Endeavours, empty hopes and fears!
Your fate is not to wither here,
And, passionless, your soul to save
Behind these walls, a scentless rose
Unopened by the honey bee
And dull to the Divinity.
Ah no! My lovely one, your morrow
Is marked by different destiny,
A different depth of ecstasy,
A different scale of sorrow;
Leave then your former thoughts, desires
And leave the poor world to its fate.
Then, in return, you may aspire
To enter realms of knowledge true,
And there I shall present to you
The hosts of beings subordinate
Unto my will to serve your needs,
Light-handed, magical attendants
And from the morning star for you
I'll tear the crown of gold one night,
Take from the flowers the midnight dew

And shake the drops in showers bright
To make the crown resplendent.
The sunset's glowing ray I'll weave
To wind about you like a sheath;
I'll fill the air about us two
With freshness and delicious scent;
And constantly your ear I'll woo
With sweet sounds from soft instruments;
Of turquoise and of amber I
Shall build delightful halls for you,
I shall go soaring to the sky
Sink to the bottom of the sea—
All you could wish for I shall give
But love me. . . .”

XI

And most gently he
Did touch his burning lips to hers;
Full of seduction were the words
In which he soothed her soft repining;
His mighty gaze held fast her eyes
And burnt her.—In the cloistered shade
He glinted poised above her, shining,
Inevitable as a blade.
The evil spirit overcomes her.
His kiss, like deadly poison, numbs her
And stills the heart within her breast.
One terrified and anguished cry
Aroused the silent night from rest.
It was a last, a desperate plea
Yet full of love, live agony,
Hopeless farewell, finality. . .
To her young life a last good-bye.

XII

The midnight watchman on his rounds
His hand upon his iron gong
Beneath the high wall passed along

His path appointed, paused and found
 His mind in turmoil. What was this?
 From the high windows of her cell
 It seemed he heard a willing kiss,
 A sudden cry, a groan suppressed. . . .
 Impious doubts rose in his breast
 And the old man stood listening, ready
 To sound the alarm. But silence fell
 All round him. He could hear the steady
 Rustling of leaves borne by the wind
 And, from the shingle, clear but faint,
 The mountain rivers' soft complaint.
 He hastened to recall to mind
 The prayers prescribed against illusions
 And diabolical delusions;
 Then crossed himself with trembling fingers
 The last, luxurious dreams to lay
 And, fearing longer there to linger,
 With quickened pace strode on his way.

.

XIII

As lovely as a Peri-sprite,
 Tamara on her death bed rested.
 Her brow was purer and more white
 Than the chaste veil in which they vested
 Their novice, so untimely dead.
 The lashes were forever lowered
 Yet who, oh God, would not have said
 The eyes beneath them did but sleep,
 Awaiting but the kiss empowered
 To wake them from enchanted rest
 Or but to feel the day-star peep?
 Yet all in vain the sun caressed
 Them with its golden, glowing beams;
 Her fathers' kiss, his silent sorrow,
 Could not awake her from her dreams. . . .
 No, none can break the seal of death
 Nor give eternal night a morrow!

XIV

Never, in days of happiness
Was the poor maid so richly clad,
So festive and so bright her dress. . . .
Such was the custom of her land.
Flowers from her native valley breathed
Their scent around her and she had
Clasped them so tight in her dead hand
As though yet to this earth she cleaved!
No hint was there in her still face
Of how she met her end—in ardent
Intoxication, fatal passion.
But rather seemed she of a race
Apart, the lovely features carved
Of marble, void of mind or feeling,
Expressionless, all fire concealing,
Mysterious as death itself.
About her lips there frozen dwelt
A strange smile, fixed even as it passed.
To those who looked in careful fashion
Unhappy was the tale it told:
A smile contemptuous and cold
As of a soul prepared to wither
And silently to bid a last
Farewell to all things of this hither
World, the last reflection
Of her last thought, vain recollection
Of all her life before, more dead
Than those eternally closed eyes;
To those who stood about her bed
Still more conducive to despair.
So, at the solemn sunset hour
When, melting in the golden air,
Day's chariot already flies
Into the Western seas to plummet,
For a brief instant yet his power .
Dwells on the mountain tops, whose snow
Reflects a rosy, living glow

That gleams on through the distant dark.
Yet weak and fading is that ray,
And from its distant, ice-bound summit
To guide the traveller on his way
It can awake no answering spark! . . .

XV

The mourning kinsfolk and the crowd
Of neighbours are foregathered now.
Tearing the gray locks on his brow
Old Gudáal scorns to weep aloud
But silently mounts his great horse
And the procession takes the road.
Three days, three nights they hold their course
And then at last set down their load
Amidst her ancestors' remains.
Old Gudáal's forefather, they say,
A brigand whose ill-gotten gains
Disturbed his conscience, when one day
He was struck down by dread disease,
Had thought the memory to ease
Of his past sins by doing penance;
So he had promised in the presence
Of witnesses to build a church
Upon a lofty, granite perch
High in the hills where no sound came
Except the singing of the storm,
A fitting nest for kites and crows.
And soon amidst the Kazbek snows
A solitary temple rose,
And there the villain with his bones
Did finally inter his shame.
So was this cloud-capped rock transformed
Into a graveyard for his kin.
As though the nearer to the sky,
The warmer after death we lie?
As though the further from the din
Of life the sounder we should sleep. . . ?

Vain hope! For dead men may not keep,
Even in dreams, the memory
Of joy or tears in days gone by. . . .

XVI

Winging through heaven's spaces blue,
A holy angel golden-pinioned
Bearing her sinful spirit flew
Towards the Father's high dominions.
And, cradling her in mighty arms,
With words of hope dispelled her doubt
And washed the traces of alarm
And all transgression with his weeping.
The music of the spheres rang out
From Heaven to meet them as they rose
When, from the nether regions sweeping,
Came the infernal spirit hurtling
Between them and their goal divine. . . .
And mighty was he as the whirlwind
Shot through with lightnings. Insolence
Consumed him and mad arrogance
With certainty he claimed her. "Mine!"

Circled by the strong arms which bore her,
Tamara's sinful soul shrank close
To the protecting angel's side
Seeking in prayer her fear to hide.
Now, once again, *he* stood before her
But—Heavens! Who would know him now?
His gaze so brooding and morose
So venomous with hate eternal. . .
It seemed a death-like cold infernal
Lay on that frozen face and brow.

"Spirit of darkness, get thee gone!"
Heaven's messenger then made reply:—
"The victory has been yours for long

Enough, and now the end is nigh.
Just is the judgement of the Lord!
The days of trial are over, past:
With the frail flesh, know, she has cast
Off all the claims of evil too!
For long now we have waited for her:
Her soul was of those very few
Who at the price of martyr's pain
Endured one moment long attain
To lasting joy beyond compare.
The Maker span its living thread
Out of the finest, purest air
Not for the dull world was she made
No more that it was made for her.
She has redeemed at cruel price
Her wavering faith in powers above.
She suffered, loved, laid down her life—
And Heaven opened to her love!”

The angel bent his gaze severe
Upon the Tempter, eye to eye,
Then joyful soared . . . to disappear
Into the boundless, shining sky.
The Demon watched the heating wings
Fading triumphantly from sight
And cursed his dreams of better things,
Doomed to defeat, venting his spite
And arrogance in that great curse. . . .
Alone in all the universe,
Abandoned, without love or hope! . . .

Now, on the rocky mountain slope
Above the valley of Koyshaur
An ancient ruin's standing still
A broken-fangéd, stony tower.
Tales hang thereby to send a chill
Down childish spines. A glimpse half-seen
Of bygone, legendary times,

Amongst the trees the silent pile
Shows black and menacing. Meanwhile
The aul, the mountain village, straggles
Beneath it and the earth is green,
The passing merchant loudly haggles,
The voices mingle with the chimes
Of camel-bells from caravans
That journey on from distant lands;
And through the mists the waterfall
Foams glittering down the rocky wall,
And nature glories laughingly,
As sportive as a carefree child,
In life renewed eternally,
In sun and shade and springtime wild.

Only the castle has outlasted
Its count of years and sadly ends
Its lonely days—a patriarchal
Old man who has outlived his friends
And family. Its inmates wait
In hiding for the moon to rise:
Then they hold feast, do as they will:
They run and buzz from gate to gate....
Then the grey spider, with slow skill,
Spins out her silken hermitage.
The lizards green beneath the skies
Play on the slates right merrily
And, cautiously, the serpent sage
Creeps from his cranny dark to crawl
Along the ancient porch's wall.
Now suddenly he twirls and twists
His body into three bright rings,
And now his supple brilliance slings
Into a straight, a steely rod
A lance left lying by the lists,
A dead man's sword—unmarked, unmissed
Unwanted now and quite forgot.
All has run wild, no trace is left
Of bygone years; the hand of time

Cautiously, carefully has swept
Them all away: The glorious prime
Of Gudáal—vanished without token.
His daughter's name no longer spoken!

Only the Church on its sheer height
Where the scant earth once took their bones
Preservéd by some sacred might
Is guarded by black standing stones
Of granite, sentinels unarmoured
Save for th'eternal ice which glows
Like mail upon their fronts, their shoulders
Draped in heavy cloaks of snows.
And frowning avalanches brood
On the steep slopes, each frozen flood
Like some vast, frosted waterfall.
The howling wind keeps sentry-go
Blowing the snow-dust from the wall,
Now checks the watch, calling the roll,
Now singing songs sad, long and low;
And far and wide the church is known
In all the lands—a holy wonder:
And yet the orient clouds alone
Flock round to worship at the shrine
And yet upon the stones, whereunder
Tamara and her kin still sleep,
No weeping pilgrims sit and pine
Only the sullen mountain bent
Above them vigilance does keep:
That man's eternal discontent
Might not break in upon their slumber.

PROSE

A PANORAMA OF MOSCOW

He who has never climbed to the top of Ivan the Great, who has never had the opportunity to take in the whole of the ancient capital at one glance from end to end, who has never once admired that majestic panorama, stretching almost beyond the range of vision, knows absolutely nothing about Moscow. For Moscow is not an ordinary city like thousands of others; Moscow is no silent immensity of cold stones piled one upon the other to form symmetrical patterns . . . no, indeed! It has its own soul, its own life. As in an ancient Roman cemetery, every stone is graven with its own inscription, carved by time and destiny, an inscription beyond the comprehension of the crowd but rich and rewarding in thought, feeling and inspiration for the scholar, the patriot and the poet! . . . Like the ocean, the city has its own language, powerful, resonant, venerable, prayerful! . . . No sooner has the day begun than from its golden-helmeted churches resounds a harmonious hymn of bells reminiscent of some strange, fantastical Beethoven overture, in which the dense tones of the double-bass and clashing of the kettle-drums mingle with the singing of the violins and flutes to make up one magnificent whole; —and it seems as though the disembodied sounds were taking on a visible form, as though the spirits of heaven and hell were combining under the clouds in one diverse, immeasurable, swiftly whirling dance! . . .

Oh, what bliss to hear this sacred music from the topmost turret of Ivan the Great, resting your elbows in the narrow, mossy window embrasure to which you

have been led by a worn and slippery spiral staircase, and to think that all this orchestra is clamouring beneath your feet and to imagine that the whole performance is for you alone, that you are the sovereign of this immaterial world, and to devour with your eyes that vast anthill where people you do not know are all so busy about their own business, where passions are seething which you, for the moment, have put away from you and forgotten!... What bliss thus to perceive in one's heart the whole vanity of life, all the pettiness of man's concerns, and to contemplate the world—from a height!

To the North, in the extreme distance, a little to the right of the Peter Castle, the fabled quarter of Maryina Roshcha stretches black to the blue edge of the horizon and before it lies a strata of brightly-coloured roofs intersected here and there by the dusty green of the boulevards which follow the line of the ancient city wall; on the steep rise, with its scattering of low houses and here and there the wide white wall of some boyar's dwelling, rises a four-cornered, grey-blue fantastic pile: the Sukharev Watchtower. It surveys its surroundings proudly, as though aware that the name of Peter is inscribed on its mossy brow! Its gloomy appearance, gigantic proportions and incisive lines all bear the stamp of another age, the stamp of that formidable power which proved so irresistible to every foe.

Nearer to the centre the appearance of the city becomes more harmonious, more European; we catch a glimpse of rich colonnades, wide courtyards surrounded by wrought-iron railings, countless cupolas, pointed bell-towers surmounted by rusty crosses and patterned by brightly painted cornices.

Still nearer, on the wide square, rises the Peter Theatre, a product of the very latest art, a huge building constructed according to all the canons of good taste with flat roof and majestic portico from which there rises an alabaster Apollo riding lightly poised on one foot in an alabaster chariot, immovably driving three alabaster stallions and gazing with considerable vexation at the Kremlin wall,



Lermontov in dress uniform. Zabolotsky, Lermontov's drawing teacher, was commissioned by the poet's grandmother to paint this portrait in 1837 when, on the orders of the tsar, her grandson had been banished to the Caucasus. Cardboard. Oils.



Alexander Pushkin. Portrait by Orest Kiprensky. 1827. The shot which killed Pushkin, roused the soul of Lermontov. The poem *On the Death of the Poet* was written late in the evening of January 29, 1837. Lermontov was now spoken of as Pushkin's successor.



Svyatoslav Rayevsky, Lermontov's close friend who was the first to hear his poem *On the Death of the Poet*. Rayevsky was exiled to Olonetsk Gubernia for circulating handwritten copies of the poem. A watercolour by Lermontov.

which jealously cuts him off from the more ancient and sacred monuments of Russia!...

To the East the picture is yet richer and more varied; just beyond the wall of the Kremlin, which follows the slope downhill to the right and terminates in a round corner-tower, covered with green tiles as if with scales, a little to the left of this tower appear the countless cupolas of the Church of St. Basil the Blessed, whose seventy side-chapels are the wonder of all foreigners and which no Russian has yet undertaken to describe in exact detail.

Like the ancient tower of Babylon, the church consists of several elevations crowned by a huge, indented, rainbow-coloured dome, strikingly reminiscent (if I may be forgiven the comparison) of the stopper of an old cutglass decanter. To all points of the compass round about are placed the secondary domes, no one in the very least like the others; they are scattered about the whole building without symmetry or order like young growths sprouting from the gnarled and naked roots of an ancient tree.

Heavy twisted pillars support the iron roofing which overhangs the doors and the outer galleries from which small, dark windows peer like the wary eyes of some hundred-headed monster. Around these windows are traced thousands of hieroglyphics; occasionally the dim light of an icon-lamp can be seen flickering through their latticed glass like a peaceful glowworm pulsating amongst ivy which has festooned itself about some ancient, ruinous tower. From the outside each side-chapel is painted in a different colour as though they had not all been built at the same time, as though each successive ruler of Moscow had, in the course of many years, added an altar in honour of his own patron saint.

There must be very few citizens of Moscow who have made up their minds to tour each one of the side-chapels of this church. It's sombre outward appearance is in itself discouraging; it seems as though one were looking at Ivan the Terrible himself,—such as he was in the last years of his life!

And what of it?—Immediately next door to this magnificent gloomy building, right opposite its very doors, seethes the unwashed crowd:—rows of stalls shine, itinerant salesmen cry their wares, bakers bustle about the foot of the Minin Monument; fashionable carriages rattle by, fashionable ladies chatter, . . . everything is so noisy, animated, bustling! . . .

To the right of St. Basil's, at the bottom of a steep slope, flows the River Moskva, wide, shallow and dirty, overcrowded by a vast number of heavy vessels bringing cargoes of grain and wood; their long masts crowned with striped pennants rise from behind the Moskvoretsky bridge; their creaking rigging, shaken like cobwebs in the wind, makes a faint black tracery against the blueness of the sky. On the left bank of the river, gazing down into its smooth waters, stands the white orphanage whose wide, bare walls, symmetrically placed windows and chimneys and generally European air are in strong contrast to the other buildings in that neighbourhood which are either clothed in oriental luxury or clearly medieval in inspiration. Further to the East on three hills, between which the river winds and loops, are various large groups of houses of every conceivable shape and colour; the weary eye scarcely distinguishes the far horizon on which are outlined the groupings of several monasteries, among which the St. Simon Monastery is remarkable for its look-out platform, hovering almost between earth and sky, from which our ancestors kept watch upon the movements of approaching Tatars.

To the South, at the foot of the hill immediately beneath the Kremlin wall itself, opposite the Taynitskiye Gates, the river flows on, and beyond it a wide vale scattered with houses and churches stretches to the very foot of the Poklonnaya Hill from which Napoleon cast his first glance upon the Kremlin that was to prove his doom and from which, for the first time, he saw that prophetic flame, that dread torch which was to illuminate his triumph and his fall!

To the West, beyond the tall tower where only swal-

lows can live (because, having been built after the French, it has neither floors nor ceilings inside and its walls are supported only by crossbeams) rise the arches of Kamenny bridge, which soars from one bank to the other in one leaping curve; the water, held back by a smallish dam, flows noisily beneath the vaults, forming small waterfalls which, particularly in the spring, attract the curiosity of our Muscovite idlers, and sometimes become the receptacle of the body of some poor sinner. Further than the bridge, on the right-hand side of the river, you can distinguish the jagged silhouette of the Aleksis Monastery; to the left, on the plain between the roofs of the merchants' houses, gleam the roofs of the Donskoy Monastery. . . . And there behind them, clothed in a blue mist rising from the cold waves of the river, begin the Vorobyev Hills, topped by dense groves looking down from their steep slopes to the river as it goes winding past their feet like a silvery snake.

When the day begins to fade, when the more distant parts of the city and the encircling hills are wrapped in a rosy haze, then only is it possible to see our ancient capital in all its glory, for, like a beauty who only shows her loveliest clothes in the evening, it is only in this solemn hour that she can make a really strong, indelible impression on our hearts.

What is comparable to this Kremlin which, surrounded by its coronated wall, the golden domes of its cathedrals shining, adorns its lofty hill like a royal crown the forehead of a mighty sovereign? . . .

It is the altar of Russia on which many sacrifices worthy of the fatherland have been and will yet be laid. . . . Is it so long since, like the legendary phoenix, it rose from its own flaming ashes?!

What could be more impressive than these dark churches, huddled close together? Than the mysterious palace of Godunov whose cold pillars and stones have now for so many years heard no sound of human voices like a mausoleum that rises in the midst of a desert in memory of great kings?!

No; neither the Kremlin, nor its crenellated walls, nor its dark passages, nor its magnificent state apartments can really be described. All this must be seen, be seen . . . and all that they have to say to the heart and imagination . . . this all has to be felt.

1833-1834

Lermontov,
Cornet of the Hussar Regiment of Imperial Guards.

ASHEEK-KERIB

A Story from Turkey

A long, long time ago, in the town of Tiflis, lived a very rich Turk; Allah had given him much gold, but dearer than gold to him was his only daughter Magul-Megeri: the stars in the sky are beautiful but behind the stars live the angels, and they are still more beautiful. Even so was Magul-Megeri more beautiful than all the maidens of Tiflis. Also living in Tiflis was a certain poor man—Asheek-Kerib; the prophet had given him nothing but a noble heart—and the gift of song. He would play on the saaz at the wedding-feasts of the rich and fortunate and sing the glories of the old heroes of Turkestan; at one such feast he set eyes on Magul-Megeri and they fell in love with one another. Little hope had poor Asheek-Kerib of ever winning her hand and he became as sorrowful as the sky in winter.

One day he was lying out in a garden under a grape vine and had at last managed to get off to sleep; just then Magul-Megeri happened to be passing with some of her friends; one of them, seeing the sleeping Asheek (which means simply a minstrel, one who plays the saaz), dropped behind the others and went up to him: "Why are you sleeping under that vine?" she sang. "Get up, you madman, your gazelle is passing!" He woke up—the girl fluttered away, quick as a bird; Magul-Megeri heard her song and began to scold her: "If only you knew," her friend answered, "who it was that I was singing that song to, you would have said thank you: it was your Asheek-Kerib." "Take me to him," said Magul-Megeri; and off they went. When she saw his sad face, Magul-Megeri began to put all kinds of ques-

tions to him and to comfort him. "How can I help being sad," replied Asheek-Kerib, "I love you and you will never be mine." "Ask my father for my hand," she said, "and my father will pay for our wedding feast with his own money and will give me such a dowry as will suffice for us both." "All right," he answered, "let us assume that Ayak-Aga will spare nothing for the happiness of his daughter; but who knows that afterwards you will not reproach me that I had nothing and owe everything to you;—no, dear Magul-Megeri; I have set myself a task; I promise to wander the earth for seven years and either to make my fortune or to perish in the deserts far away; if you agree to this then, when the time is fulfilled, you will be mine." She agreed, but added that if he did not return on the day agreed, she would wed Kurshud-Bek, who had long sought her hand.

Asheek-Kerib went to his mother; he received her blessing on his journey, kissed his little sister, slung a pack over his shoulder, took a staff in his hand to lean on and left the town of Tiflis. Then a horseman overtook him. He looked up—and it was Kurshud-Bek. "A good journey to you," called Kurshud-Bek, "wherever you go, wanderer, I will be your companion." Asheek was not best pleased with this companion but there was nothing he could do about it; for a long time they continued on their way together, then they saw before them a river. There was neither bridge nor ford:—"Swim on," said Kurshud-Bek, "I will come after you." Asheek took off his upper garment and swam; having reached the other side he looked back and—oh sorrow! Oh Almighty Allah! Kurshud-Bek, having taken his robe, was galloping back in the direction of Tiflis, dust rising behind him in a long serpentine trail over the level plain. When he reached Tiflis, Kurshud-Bek took Asheek-Kerib's robe to his old mother: "Your son has drowned in a deep river," he said. "Here is his robe." In inexpressible distress, the mother fell on the clothing of her beloved son and began to shed bitter tears upon it; then she took the robe and carried it to her daughter-in-law elect, Magul-Megeri.

"My son has drowned," she told her. "Kurshud-Bek has brought back his clothing; you are free." Magul-Megeri smiled and replied: "Don't you believe it, it's all invented by that Kurshud-Bek: before seven years have passed no one shall be my husband." She took her saaz down from the wall and calmly began to sing poor Asheek-Kerib's favourite song.

In the meantime the wanderer had arrived naked and barefoot at a certain village; kind people clothed and fed him; in return he sang them wonderful songs. In this way he travelled on from village to village, from town to town, and his reputation grew and went on before him. At length he arrived in Halaf; as was his custom he first visited the coffee-house, asked for a saaz and began to sing. Now at this time there was a Pasha living in Halaf, a great amateur of minstrels; many were brought to him—but none pleased him; his chaushi* were quite exhausted with looking through the town; suddenly, as they were passing the coffee-house, they heard a remarkable voice; they rushed in—"Come with us, to the Great Pasha," they shouted, "or we will have your head from your shoulders." "I am a free man, a wanderer from the city of Tiflis," said Asheek-Kerib, "I go where I will and where I will not, there I do not go; I sing when the spirit moves me and your Pasha's no master of mine." However, in spite of all this he was seized and borne off to the Pasha. "Sing," said the Pasha, and he opened his mouth and sang. And in this song he praised his beloved Magul-Megeri; and the song pleased the proud Pasha so much that he asked poor Asheek-Kerib to stay with him. He showered him with silver and gold, his rich garments gleamed as he moved; merry and fortunate was the life of Asheek-Kerib and he became exceedingly rich; whether or not it was that he had forgotten all about his Magul-Megeri, the time he had set himself was running out and he was not even preparing to leave. The beautiful Magul-Megeri fell into despair; at this

* Junior rank in Turkish army.—*Ed.*

same time a certain merchant was about to set forth from Tiflis with forty camels and eighty slaves.

She called the merchant to her and presented him with a golden dish: "Take this dish," she said, "and display it in your stall in every town that you come to; then let it be proclaimed everywhere that whoever admits ownership of my dish and proves his claim may have it and its weight in gold into the bargain." The merchant set off on his travels and everywhere he went he did as Magul-Megeri had asked him, but none admitted ownership of the dish. He had sold almost all his goods when he arrived with the remainder in Halaf: here too he proclaimed what Magul-Megeri had bidden him throughout the town. When Asheek-Kerib heard this he came quickly to the caravanserai: and there he saw the golden dish in the stall of the merchant from Tiflis. "That is mine," he said seizing it with one hand. "It is yours indeed," said the merchant. "I recognise you, Asheek-Kerib: get you to Tiflis as quick as you can: your Magul-Megeri told me to tell you that the time is running out and if you are not there on the day agreed she will marry another." In despair Asheek-Kerib took his head in his hands: only three days remained until the fateful hour. Nevertheless he mounted his horse, took with him a considerable sum in gold coinage and galloped off not sparing his horse. Finally the exhausted beast fell winded on the mount of Arzingan that is between Arzinyan and Arzerum. What was he to do: from Arzinyan to Tiflis was a two months' journey and there were only two days left. "Almighty Allah," he cried, "if you do not help me now, then there is nothing left for me on this earth." He wanted to throw himself from a high cliff; suddenly he saw at the bottom of the cliff a man on a white horse and heard a resonant shout: "Hey there, what are you trying to do?" "I'm trying to kill myself," answered Asheek. "Come down here, if that's how things are, and I'll kill you." Asheek climbed down. "Come with me," said the mounted man threateningly. "How can I keep up with you?" asked Asheek. "Your horse flies like the

wind and I am weighed down by my pack." —"True; hang your bag on my saddle and follow me." Asheek Kerib did his best to run but nevertheless began to lag behind. "Why can't you keep up?" asked the horseman. "How can I keep up with you? Your horse runs swifter than thought and I am already exhausted." —"True. Sit behind me on my horse and tell me the truth, where you wish to go." —"If I could even get as far as Arzerum today," answered Asheek. "Shut your eyes, then." He shut them. "Now open them." Asheek opened his eyes and looked. There before him shone the white walls and the minarets of Arzerum. "I beg your pardon, Aga," said Asheek. "I made a mistake. I meant to say that I should like to be in Kars." —"There you are then," the mounted man replied. "I warned you to tell me the real truth; shut your eyes again. Now open them." Asheek could not believe the evidence of his own senses: that it really was Kars. He fell on his knees and said: "I have behaved very wrongly, Aga. Your servant Asheek is three times in the wrong: but you know yourself that if a man makes up his mind to tell lies in the morning he is obliged to go on lying till the end of the day: the place I really need to get to is Tiflis." —"Well you *are* a man of little faith," said the horseman angrily. "However, there's nothing to be done about it: I forgive you: go on, shut your eyes. Now open them," he added a moment later. Asheek gave a cry of joy: they were at the gates of Tiflis. Thanking him sincerely and taking his bag from the saddle, Asheek-Kerib said to the horseman: "Aga, of course, what you have done for me is very much; but do still more; if I tell people now how in one day I came from Arzinyan to Tiflis, no one will believe me; give me some proof." —"Bend down," said the man, smiling, "and take a handful of earth from under my horse's shoe and hide it in your robe: then if people do not believe your words, order them to bring you a blind woman who has been in this state for seven years, rub the earth on her eyes and she will see." Asheek took the earth from under the horse's hoof but no sooner did

he raise his head than horse and rider both disappeared; then it was that he believed in his heart that his patron had been none other than Haderiliaz (St. George).

Only late in the evening did Asheek-Kerib reach his home: he knocked on the door with trembling hand and said: "Ana, ana (mother), open the door: I am God's guest; cold and hungry; let me in, please, for the sake of your wandering son." The old woman's weak voice answered him: "To shelter travellers there are the houses of the rich and the powerful: and there are weddings being celebrated in the town, too—you had better go there; you will have the chance to spend the whole night in pleasure." —"Ana," he replied, "I know no one here and so I beg you again: for the sake of your wandering son, let me in." Then his sister said to their mother: "Mother, I will get up and open the door to him." — "Worthless girl," answered the old woman; "you are happy to take in young men and give them meat and drink because it is seven years now since I lost my sight from much weeping."

Her daughter, however, taking no notice of her reproaches, opened the door and admitted Asheek-Kerib: having pronounced the customary greeting he sat down and began to look around him with concealed anxiety: and on the wall he saw his sweet-voiced saaz hanging in a dusty cover. He asked his mother: "What is that hanging on your wall there?" — "You are curious, guest," she replied. "Let it be enough for you that we give you a bite of bread and let you go on your way tomorrow with our blessings." — "I have already told you," he argued, "that you are my very own mother and this is my sister and for this good reason I beg of you to explain to me what it is you have hanging there on the wall." — "It is a saaz, a saaz," answered the old woman crossly, not believing a word he said.

"And what does 'saaz' mean?" — "Saaz means a thing to play on and sing songs to." Asheek-Kerib begged her to allow his sister to take the saaz down from the wall and to show it to him. "No," said the old woman. "That

is the saaz of my unhappy son and it has been hanging on the wall for seven years now where no living hand has touched it." But his sister had already risen, taken the saaz down from the wall and given it to him: then he raised his eyes to heaven and prayed this prayer: "O, Almighty Allah! if I am to achieve my end, then let my seven-stringed saaz be as perfectly tuned as on the day when I played upon it for the last time." And he struck the copper strings and the strings responded in perfect harmony: and he began to sing: "I am poor Kerib (a beggar), and poor are my words; but the great Haderiliaz helped me to descend from the high cliff, although I am poor and poor are my words. Recognise me, mother, know your wanderer." Upon which his mother burst into tears and asked: "What is your name?"—"Rashid" (the brave) he replied. "Once you have spoken, Rashid, and once you shall listen to me," she said. "Your words have cut my heart to pieces. Tonight I saw in my sleep that the hair of my head had gone white, and it is seven years now since I lost my sight from much weeping; tell me, oh you who have his voice, when will my son come back to me?" And twice she repeated her question with tears. In vain he told her that he was her son, she did not believe him and after a while he asked: "Mother, permit me to take the saaz and to go. I have heard there is a wedding near here: my sister will show me the way; I shall play and sing, and everything I receive I shall bring back here and share with you."—"No," said the old woman, "since my son left, his saaz has not once been out of this house." But he began to promise that he would not harm so much as a single string. "And if but one string breaks," Asheek went on, "I shall give you all my property as a forfeit." The old woman felt his bags and realising that they were full of coins, she allowed him to go; having accompanied him to a rich house where a noisy wedding feast was in progress his sister waited in the doorway to see what would happen.

In this house lived Magul-Megeri, and that very night

she was to become the wife of Kurshud-Bek. Kurshud-Bek was feasting with his friends and relatives, but Magul-Megeri, sitting behind a rich curtain with her friends, held in one hand a cup of poison and, in the other, a sharp dagger: she had sworn to die rather than let her head rest upon the pillow with Kurshud-Bek. From behind the curtain she heard that a stranger had come, who said: "Salaam aleikum: you are merry here and make feast, so permit me, a poor wanderer, to sit amongst you and for that I will sing you a song." — "Why not?" said Kurshud-Bek. "The doors are open to all singers and dancers, because we are celebrating a wedding. Sing us something, Asheek (minstrel)—and I will send you on your way with a whole fist-full of gold."

Then Kurshud-Bek asked him: "And what is your name, traveller?" — "Shindi-Gyorursez (you will soon find out)". — "That is a strange name," the other exclaimed, laughing. "It's the first time I have heard it!" — "When my mother bore me and laboured in pain at my birth, then many neighbours came to the doors and asked whether it were a boy or a girl God had given her; they were answered: 'Shindi-gyorursez' (you will soon find out). And that is why—when I eventually was born—I was given that name." Thereupon he took his *saaz* and began to play:

"In the town of Halaf I drank wine of Misir, but God gave me wings and I flew hither in one day."

Kurshud-Bek's brother, a rather stupid man, drew his dagger and shouted: "You are lying: how could you come here from Halaf in one day?"

"Why do you want to kill me?" asked Asheek: "It is usual for singers to assemble at one place from far and wide; and I take nothing from you, believe me or believe me not."

"Let him go on," said the bridegroom, and Asheek-Kerib took up his song again.

"I made my morning prayer in the valley of Arzinyan, my noon-tide prayer in the town of Arzerum; before the setting of the sun I made my prayer before the town of

Kars, and my evening prayer in Tiflis. Allah gave me wings, and I came flying hither; may God grant that I be as a sacrifice to the white stallion, for he galloped swiftly, surefooted as a tight-rope walker, from the mountain into the ravine and from the ravine into the mountain: Maulyam (the Creator) gave Asheek wings, and he has come to the wedding of Magul-Megeri."

Then Magul-Megeri, recognising his voice, threw the dagger one way and the cup of poison the other: "So that is how you keep your oath," said her friends; "This way you will be the wife of Kurshud-Bek this very night." — "You did not know him, but I know the voice of my beloved," answered Magul-Megeri and, taking a pair of scissors, she cut through the curtain. When she had peeped through and seen that it was indeed her Asheek-Kerib, she cried out, then she flung herself on his neck and both fell to the ground in a dead faint. Kurshud-Bek's brother rushed to them with his knife, intending to stab them both but Kurshud-Bek stopped him, saying: "Calm yourself and know that what is written on a man's brow at birth is not thereafter to be avoided."

When she came to her senses, Magul-Megeri grew red with shame, covered her face with her hands and hid behind her curtain again.

"Now I see very well that you are Asheek-Kerib," said the bridegroom. "But tell us how you managed to travel so great a distance in so short a time." — "To prove the truth of what I say," replied Asheek, "my sabre will cut through stone and if I lie, may my neck be so thin that it will not hold up my head; but best of all bring me some blind woman who has not seen God's world for seven years, and I will give her back her sight."

Asheek-Kerib's sister, who was still standing at the door, ran for her mother when she heard these words. "Mother!" she cried, "it really is my brother and your son Asheek-Kerib," and, taking her by the arm, she led the old woman back to the feast. Then Asheek took the earth from his breast, mixed it with water and pasted

it onto his mother's eyes, saying: "Know, all ye people, how great and powerful is Haderiliaz", and his mother's eyes were opened, and she saw. After this no one dared to doubt the truth of his words, and Kurshud-Bek surrendered the beautiful Magul-Megeri without a word.

Then in his gladness Asheek-Kerib said to him: "Listen, Kurshud-Bek, I shall comfort you. My sister is no less beautiful than your former bride and I am rich; she will have no less silver and gold; so take her for yourself, and be as happy as I shall be with my beloved Magul-Megeri."

1837

A HERO OF OUR TIME

The foreword is at once the first and the last thing in any book; it serves either to explain the purpose of the work or to justify the author before his critics. Ordinarily, however, readers are concerned with neither the moral, nor the journalistic attacks on the author; hence they do not read forewords. Yet it is a pity it should be so, especially in our country. Our public is still so immature and simple-hearted that it does not understand a fable unless it finds the moral at the end. It fails to grasp a joke or sense an irony; it has simply not been brought up properly. It is as yet unaware that obvious invective has no place in respectable society and respectable books, that contemporary enlightenment has devised a sharper, almost invisible but nevertheless deadly weapon, which under the guise of flattery deals a true, unparriable blow. Our public is like the provincial who overhearing a conversation between two diplomats belonging to hostile courts carries off the conviction that each is deceiving his government for the sake of a tender mutual friendship.

The present book recently had the misfortune of being taken literally by some readers and even some magazines. Some were frightfully offended in all seriousness at being given a man as amoral as the Hero of Our Time for a model; others delicately hinted that the author had drawn portraits of himself and his acquaintances. . . . A threadbare witticism! But apparently Russia is so constituted that however she may progress in every other respect, she is unable to get rid of absurdities like this. With us

the most fantastic of fairy tales has hardly a chance of escaping criticism as an attempt at libel!

A Hero of Our Time, my dear sirs, is indeed a portrait, but not of one man; it is a portrait built up of all our generation's vices in full bloom. You will again tell me that a human being cannot be so wicked, and I shall reply that if you can believe in the existence of all the villains of tragedy and romance, why should you not believe that there was a Pechorin? If you could admire far more terrifying and repulsive types, why are you not more merciful to this character, even if it is fictitious? Is it not because there is more truth in it than you might wish?

You say that morality will gain nothing by it. I beg to differ. People have been fed enough sweetmeats to upset their stomachs; now bitter remedies, acid truths, are needed. Yet you should not think that the author of this book was ever ambitious enough to aspire to reform human vices. May God preserve him from such folly! It simply pleased him to portray the modern man as he sees him and as he so often, to his own and your misfortune, has found him to be. Suffice it that the disease has been diagnosed; how to cure it the Lord alone knows!

Part I

I

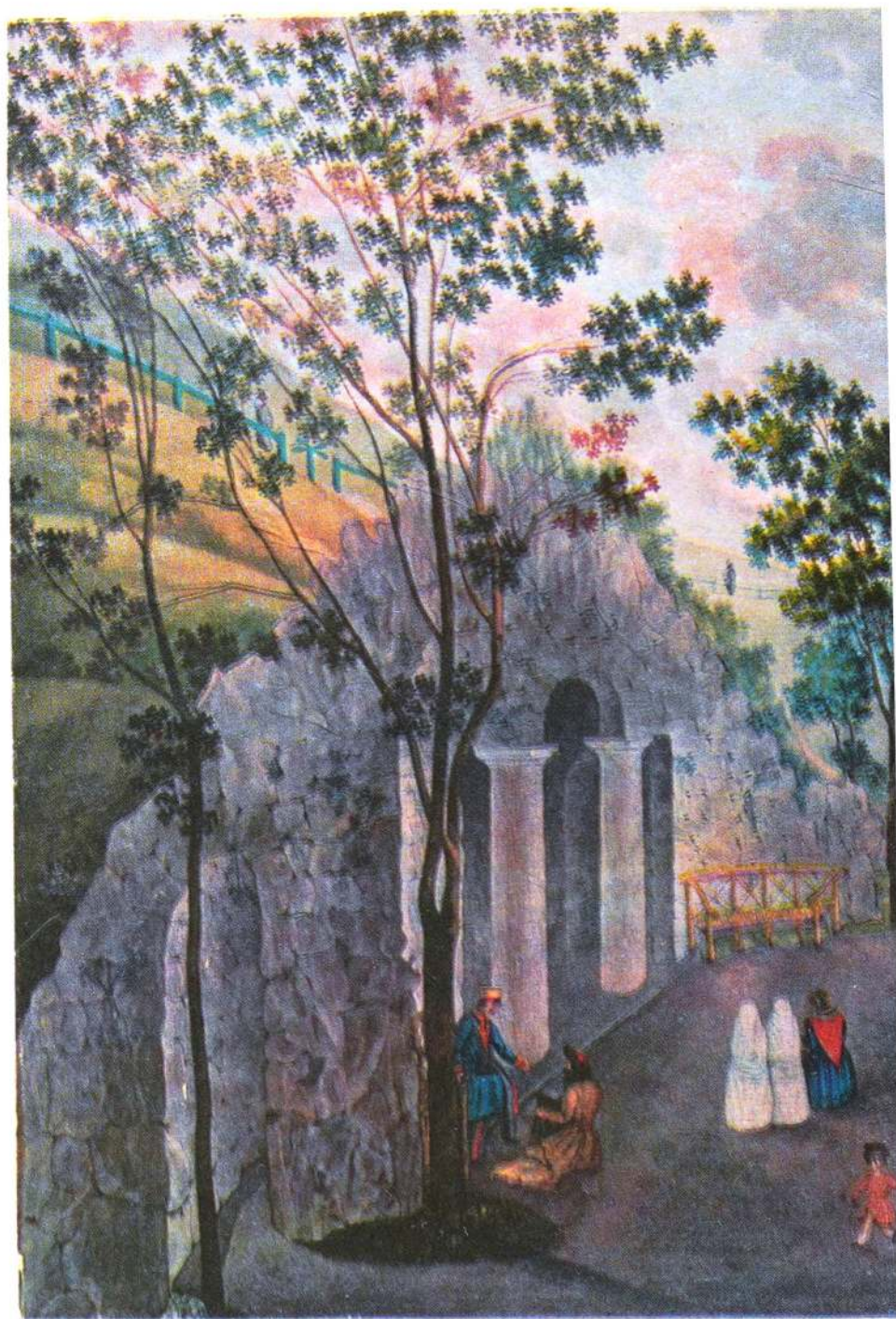
BELA

I was travelling along the post road from Tiflis. The only luggage in the carriage was one small portmanteau half-full of travel notes about Georgia. Fortunately for you the greater part of them has been lost since then, though luckily for me the case and the rest of the things in it have survived.

The sun was already slipping behind a snow-capped ridge when I drove into Koishaur Valley. The Ossetian



Alexander Odoyevsky. A poet who took part in the December 1825 uprising against the tsar's autocracy. After doing his term of exile in Siberia, Odoyevsky was transferred to the Caucasus as a private in the Nizhni-Novgorod Dragoon Regiment where he made close friends with Lermontov who painted this watercolour.



The boulevard in Pyatigorsk described in *A Hero Of Our Time*. Watercolour by Ivanov. 1839.





The environs of Pyatigorsk, painted by Lermontov in 1837. Canvas. Oils.



A Caucasian landscape, painted by Lermontov in 1837. Thanks to the efforts of his grandmother, the poet was brought back to St. Petersburg from exile, and he painted this picture from memory while in the guardhouse. Canvas. Oils.

coachman, singing at the top of his voice, tirelessly urged his horses on in order to reach the summit of Koishaur Mountain before nightfall. What a glorious spot this valley is! All around it tower formidable mountains, reddish crags draped with hanging ivy and crowned with clusters of plane trees, yellow cliffs grooved by torrents, with a gilded fringe of snow high above, while down below the Aragva embraces a nameless stream that noisily bursts forth from a black, gloom-filled gorge and then stretches in a silvery ribbon into the distance, its surface shimmering like the scaly back of a snake.

On reaching the foot of Koishaur Mountain we stopped outside a *dukhan** where some twenty Georgians and mountaineers made up a noisy assemblage; nearby a camel caravan had halted for the night. I saw I would need oxen to haul my carriage to the top of the confounded mountain, for it was already autumn and a thin layer of ice covered the ground, and the climb was about two versts in length.

There was nothing for it but to hire six oxen and several Ossetians. One of them hoisted my portmanteau on his shoulder and the others set to helping the oxen along, doing little more than shout, however.

Behind my carriage came another pulled by four oxen with no visible exertion although the vehicle was piled high with baggage. This rather surprised me. In the wake of the carriage walked its owner, puffing at a small silver-inlaid Kabardian pipe. He was wearing an officer's coat without epaulettes and a shaggy Cherkess cap. He looked about fifty, his swarthy face betrayed a long acquaintanceship with the Caucasian sun, and his prematurely grey moustache belied his firm step and vigorous appearance. I went up to him and bowed; he silently returned my greeting, blowing out an enormous cloud of smoke.

"I take it we are fellow travellers?"

* Caucasian tavern.—*Ed.*

He bowed again but did not say a word.

"I suppose you are going to Stavropol?"

"Yes, sir, I am . . . with some government baggage."

"Will you please explain to me how it is that four oxen easily manage to pull your heavy carriage while six beasts can barely haul my empty one with the help of all these Ossetians?"

He smiled shrewdly, casting an appraising glance at me.

"I daresay you haven't been long in the Caucasus?"

"About a year," I replied.

He smiled again.

"Why do you ask?"

"No particular reason, sir. They're terrific rogues, these Asiatics! You don't think their yelling helps much, do you? You can't tell what the devil they're saying. But the oxen understand them all right; hitch up twenty of the beasts if you wish and they won't budge once those fellows begin yelling in their tongue. . . . Terrific cheats, they are. But what can you do to them? They do like to skin the traveller. Spoiled, they are, the scoundrels . . . you'll see they'll make you tip them too. I know them by now, they won't fool me!"

"Have you served long in these parts?"

"Yes, ever since Alexei Petrovich* was here," he replied, drawing himself up. "When he arrived at the line I was a sublieutenant, and under him was promoted twice for service against the mountaineers."

"And now?"

"Now I am in the third line battalion. And you, may I ask?"

I told him.

This brought the conversation to an end and we walked along side by side in silence. On top of the mountain we ran into snow. The sun set and night followed day without any interval in between as is usual in the South;

* General Alexei Petrovich Yermolov, governor-general of Georgia from 1817 till 1827.—*Ed.*

thanks to the glistening snow, however, we could easily pick out the road which still continued to climb, though less steeply than before. I gave orders to put my port-manteau in the carriage and replace the oxen with horses, and turned to look back at the valley down below for the last time, but a thick mist that rolled in waves from the gorges blanketed it completely and not a sound reached us from its depths. The Ossetians vociferously besieged me, demanding money for vodka; but the captain shouted at them so fiercely that they dispersed in a moment.

"You see what they are like!" he grumbled. "They don't know enough Russian to ask for a piece of bread, but they've learned to beg for tips: 'Officer, give me money for vodka!' Even the Tatars are better; they're tee-totalers at least. . . ."

Another verst remained to the post station. It was quiet all around, so quiet that you could trace the flight of a mosquito by its buzz. A deep gorge yawned black to the left; beyond it and ahead of us the dark-blue mountain peaks wrinkled with gorges and gullies and topped by layers of snow loomed against the pale horizon that still retained the last glimmer of twilight. Stars began to twinkle in the dark sky, and, strangely enough, it seemed that they were far higher here than in our northern sky. On both sides of the road naked black boulders jutted up from the ground, and here and there some shrubs peeped from under the snow; not a single dead leaf rustled, and it was pleasant to hear in the midst of this lifeless somnolence of nature the snorting of the tired post horses and the uneven tinkling of the Russian carriage bells.

"Tomorrow will be a fine day," I observed, but the captain did not reply. Instead he pointed to a tall mountain rising directly ahead of us.

"What's that?" I asked.

"Gud-Gora."

"Yes?"

"See how it smokes?"

Indeed, Gud-Gora was smoking; light wisps of mist

crept along its sides while a black cloud rested on the summit, so black that it stood out as a blotch even against the dark sky.

We could already make out the post station and the roofs of the huts around it, and welcoming lights were dancing ahead when the gusts of cold raw wind came whistling down the gorge and it began to drizzle. Barely had I thrown a felt cape over my shoulders than the snow came. I looked at the captain with respect now. . . .

"We'll have to stay here overnight," he said, annoyed. "You can't get through the hills in a blizzard like this. Seen any avalanches on Krestovaya?" he asked a coachman.

"No, sir," the Ossetian replied. "But there's a lot just waiting to come down."

As there was no room for travellers at the post house, we were given lodgings in a smoky hut. I invited my fellow traveller to join me at tea for I had with me a cast-iron tea-kettle—my sole comfort on my Caucasian travels.

The hut was built against a cliff. Three wet, slippery steps led up to the door. I groped my way in and stumbled upon a cow, for these people have a cowshed for an ante-room. I could not make out where to go; on one side sheep were bleating and on the other a dog growled. Fortunately a glimmer of light showed through the gloom and guided me to another opening that looked like a door. Here a rather curious scene confronted me: the spacious hut with a roof supported by two smoke-blackened posts was full of people. A fire built on the bare earth crackled in the middle, and the smoke, forced back by the wind through the opening in the roof, hung so thick that it took some time before I could distinguish anything around me. By the fire sat two old women, a swarm of children and a lean Georgian man, all of them dressed in tatters. There was nothing to do but to make ourselves comfortable by the fire and light up our pipes, and soon the tea-kettle was singing merrily.

"Pitiable creatures!" I observed to the captain, nodding

toward our grimy hosts who stared at us silently with something like stupefaction.

"A dull-witted people," he replied. "Believe me, they can't do anything, nor can they learn anything either. Our Kabardians or Chechens, rogues and vagabonds though they be, are at least good fighters, whereas these take no interest even in arms: you won't find a decent dagger on a single one of them. But what can you expect from Ossetians!"

"Were you long in Chechna?"

"Quite a while—ten years garrisoning a fort with a company, out Kammeny Brod way. Do you know the place?"

"Heard of it."

"Yes, sir, we had enough of the ruffians; now, thank God, things are quieter, but there was a time when you couldn't venture a hundred paces beyond the rampart without some hairy devil stalking you, ready to put a halter around your neck or a bullet through the back of your head the moment he caught you napping. But they were stout fellows anyway."

"You must have had a good many adventures?" I asked, spurred by curiosity.

"Aye, many indeed. . . ."

Thereupon he began to pluck at the left tip of his moustache, his head drooped and he sank into deep thought. I very badly wanted to get some sort of story out of him—a desire that is natural to anyone who travels about recording things. In the meantime the tea came to the boil; I dug out two travellers' tumblers from my portmanteau, poured out tea and placed one before the captain. He took a sip and muttered as if to himself: "Yes, many indeed!" The exclamation raised my hopes, for I knew that Caucasian old-timers like to talk; they seldom have a chance to do so, for a man may be stationed a full five years with a company somewhere in the backwoods without anyone to greet him with a "Good day" (that mode of address does not belong to the sergeant's vocabulary). And there is so much to talk about:

the wild, strange people all around, the constant dangers, and the remarkable adventures; one cannot help thinking it is a pity that we record so little of it.

"Would you care to add a little rum?" I asked. "I have some white rum from Tiflis, it will warm you up in this cold."

"No, thanks, I don't drink."

"How is that?"

"Well . . . swore off the stuff. Once when I was still a sublieutenant we went on a bit of a spree, you know how it is, and that very night there was an alarm. So we showed up before the ranks on the gay side, and there was the devil to pay when Alexei Petrovich found out. Lord preserve me from seeing a man as furious as he was; we escaped being court-martialled by a hair's breadth. That's the way it is: sometimes you spend a whole year without seeing anyone, and if you take to drink you're done for."

On hearing this I nearly lost hope.

"Take even the Cherkess," he went on. "As soon as they drink their fill of *booza* at a wedding or a funeral the fight begins. Once I barely managed to escape alive although I was the guest of a peaceable prince."

"How did it happen?"

"Well," he filled and lit his pipe, took a long draw on it, and began the story, "you see, I was stationed at the time at a fort beyond the Terek with a company—that was nearly five years back. Once in the autumn a convoy came with provisions, and with it an officer, a young man of about twenty-five. He reported to me in full dress uniform and announced that he had been ordered to join me at the fort. He was so slim and pale, and his uniform so smart that I could tell at once that he was a newcomer to the Caucasus. 'You must have been transferred here from Russia?' I asked him. 'Yes, sir,' he replied. I took his hand and said: 'Glad to have you here, very glad. It'll be a bit dull for you . . . but we'll get along very well, I'm sure. Call me simply

Maxím Maxímych, if you like, and, another thing, you need not bother wearing full dress uniform. Just come around in your forage cap.' He was shown his quarters and he settled down in the fort."

"What was his name?" I asked Maxim Maximych.

"Grigori Alexandrovich *Pechorin*. A fine chap he was, I assure you, though a bit queer. For instance, he would spend days on end hunting in rain or cold; everybody else would be chilled and exhausted, but not he. Yet sometimes a mere draught in his room would be enough for him to declare he had caught cold; a banging shutter might make him start and turn pale, yet I myself saw him go at a wild boar singlehanded; sometimes you couldn't get a word out of him for hours on end, but when he occasionally did start telling stories you'd split your sides laughing. . . . Yes, sir, a most curious sort of fellow he was, and, apparently, rich too, judging by the quantity of expensive trinkets he had."

"How long was he with you?" I asked.

"Just about a year. But it was a year I shan't forget; he caused me plenty of trouble, God forgive him! But after all, there are people who are predestined to have all sorts of odd things happen to them!"

"Odd things?" I exclaimed eagerly as I poured him some more tea.

"I'll tell you the story. Some six versts from the fort there lived a peaceable prince. His son, a lad of about fifteen, got into the habit of riding over to see us; not a day passed that he didn't come for one reason or another. Grigori Alexandrovich and I really spoiled him. What a daredevil he was, good at everything: he could pick up a cap from the ground at full gallop, and he was a crack marksman. But there was one bad thing about him: he had a terrible weakness for money. Once for a joke Grigori Alexandrovich promised him a gold piece if he stole the best goat from his father's herd, and what do you think? The very next night he dragged the animal in by the horns. Sometimes, it . . . just tried teasing him, he would flare up and reach for his dagger. 'You'll come

to a bad end, Azamat,' I would tell him. 'It'll be *yaman** for your noddle!'

"Once the old prince himself came over to invite us to a wedding; he was giving away his elder daughter and since we were *kunaks*** there was no way of declining, you know, Tatar or not. So we set out. A pack of barking dogs met us in the village. On seeing us the women hid themselves; the faces we did catch a glimpse of were far from pretty. 'I had a much better opinion of Cherkess women,' Grigori Alexandrovich said to me. 'You wait a while,' I replied, smiling. I had something up my sleeve.

"There was quite a crowd assembled in the prince's house. It's the custom among Asiatics, you know, to invite to their weddings everyone they chance to meet. We were welcomed with all due honours and shown to the best room. Before going in, though, I took care to note where they put our horses, just in case something unforeseen happened, you know."

"How do they celebrate weddings?" I asked the captain.

"Oh, in the usual way. First the mullah reads them something from the Koran, then presents are given to the newlyweds and all their relatives. They eat, and drink *booza*, until finally the horsemanship display begins, and there is always some kind of filthy, tattered creature riding a mangy lame nag playing the buffoon to amuse the company. Later, when it grows dark, what we would call a ball begins in the best room. Some miserable old man strums away on a three-stringed . . . can't remember what they call it . . . something like our *balalaika*. The girls and young men line up in two rows facing each other, clap their hands and sing. Then one of the girls and a man step into the centre and begin to chant verses to each other improvising as they go while the rest pick up the refrain. Pechorin and I occupied the

* "Bad."—*Ed.*

** "Friend."—*Ed.*

place of honour, and as we sat there the host's younger daughter, a girl of sixteen or so, came up to him and sang to him . . . what should I call it . . . a sort of compliment."

"You don't remember what she sang by any chance?"

"Yes, I think it went something like this: 'Our young horsemen are stalwart and their coats are encrusted with silver, but the young Russian officer is more stalwart still and his epaulettes are of gold. He is like a poplar among the others, yet he shall neither grow nor bloom in our orchard.' Pechorin rose, bowed to her, pressing his hand to his forehead and heart, and asked me to reply to her. Knowing their language well I translated his reply.

"When she walked away I whispered to him: 'Well, what do you think of her?'

"'Exquisite,' replied he. 'What is her name?' 'Her name is Bela,' I replied.

"And indeed, she was beautiful: tall, slim, and her eyes as black as a gazelle's looked right into your soul. Pechorin grew pensive and did not take his eyes off her, and she frequently stole a glance at him. But Pechorin was not the only one who admired the pretty princess: from a corner of the room another pair of eyes, fixed and flaming, stared at her. I looked closer and recognised my old acquaintance Kazbich. He was a man you couldn't say was friendly, though there was nothing to show he was hostile towards us. There were a good many suspicions but he had never been caught at any trickery. Occasionally he brought rams to us at the fort and sold them cheap, but he never bargained: you had to pay him what he asked; he would never cut a price even if his life depended on it. It was said of him that he would ride out beyond the Kuban with the *Abreks*,* and to tell the truth, he did look like a brigand: he was short, wiry and broad-shouldered. And clever he was, as clever as the devil! The *beshmet*** he wore was always torn

* Mountaineers who either singly or in small groups waged guerilla warfare against the authorities.—*Ed.*

** Short quilted jacket.—*Ed.*

and patched, but his weapons were set in silver. As for his horse, it was famous in all Kabarda, and indeed, you couldn't think of a better horse. The horsemen all around had very good reason to envy him, and time and again they tried to steal the animal, but in vain. I can still see that horse as if he were before me now: as black as pitch, with legs like taut violin strings and eyes no worse than Bela's. He was a strong animal too, could gallop fifty versts at a stretch, and as for training, he would follow his master like a dog and even recognised his voice. Kazbich never bothered to tether the animal. A regular brigand horse!

"That evening Kazbich was more morose than I had ever seen him, and I noticed that he had a coat of mail under his *besmet*. 'There must be a reason for the armour,' thought I. 'He is evidently scheming something.'

"It was stuffy indoors, so I stepped out into the fresh air. The night was settling on the hills and the mist was beginning to weave in and out among the gorges.

"It occurred to me to look into the shelter where our horses stood and see whether they were being fed, besides which caution is never amiss. After all, I had a fine horse and a good many Kabardians had cast fond glances at him and said: '*Yakshi tkhe, chek yakshi!*'"

"I was picking my way along the fence when suddenly I heard voices; one of the speakers I recognised right away: it was that scapegrace Azamat, our host's son. The other spoke more slowly and quietly. 'I wonder what they're up to,' thought I. 'I hope it's not about my horse.' I dropped down behind the fence and cocked my ears, trying not to miss a word. It was impossible to catch everything, for now and then the singing and the hum of voices from the hut drowned out the conversation I was so interested to hear.

"'That's a fine horse you have,' Azamat was saying. 'Were I the master of my house and the owner of a

* "Good horse, very good."—*Ed.*

drove of three hundred mares, I'd give half of them for your horse, Kazbich!'

" 'So it's Kazbich,' I thought and remembered the coat of mail.

" 'You're right,' Kazbich replied after a momentary silence, 'you won't find another like him in all Kabarda. Once, beyond the Terek it was, I rode with the *Abreks* to pick up some Russian horses. We were unlucky though, and had to scatter. Four Cossacks came after me; I could already hear the *gyaurs** shouting behind me, and ahead of me was a thicket. I bent low in the saddle, trusted myself to Allah and for the first time in my life insulted the horse by striking him. Like a bird he flew between the branches; the thorns tore my clothes and the dry karagach twigs lashed my face. The horse leapt over stumps and crashed through the brush. It would have been better for me to slip off him in some glade and take cover in the woods on foot, but I could not bear to part with him, so I held on, and the Prophet rewarded me. Some bullets whistled past overhead; I could hear the Cossacks, now dismounted, running along my trail. . . . Suddenly a deep gully opened up in front; my horse hesitated for a moment, and then jumped. But on the other side his hind legs slipped off the sheer edge and he was left holding on by the forelegs. I dropped the reins and slipped into the gully. This saved the horse, who managed to pull himself up. The Cossacks saw all this, but none of them came down into the ravine to look for me; they probably gave me up for dead. Then I heard them going after my horse. My heart bled as I crawled through the thick grass of the gully until I was out of the woods. Now I saw some Cossacks riding out from the thicket into the open and my Karagyozy galloping straight at them. With a shout they made a dash for him. They chased him for a long time. One of them almost got a halter around his neck once or twice; I trembled, turned away and began praying. Looking up

* Term of opprobrium among Moslems for unbelievers.—Ed.

a few moments later I saw my Karagyozy flying free as the wind, his tail streaming while the *gyaurs* trailed far behind in the plain on their exhausted horses. I swear by Allah this is the truth! I sat in my gully until far into the night. And what do you think happened, Azamat? Suddenly through the darkness I heard a horse running along the brink of the gully, snorting, neighing and stamping his hoofs; I recognised the voice of my Karagyozy, for it was he, my comrade! Since then we have never parted.'

"You could hear the man patting the smooth neck of the horse and addressing him with all kinds of endearments.

" 'Had I a drove of a thousand mares,' said Azamat, 'I would give it to you for your Karagyozy.'

" '*Iok*,* I wouldn't take it,' replied Kazbich indifferently.

" 'Listen, Kazbich,' Azamat coaxed him. 'You are a good man and a brave jigit; my father fears the Russians and does not let me go into the mountains. Give me your horse and I will do anything you want, I'll steal for you my father's best musket or sabre, whatever you wish—and his sabre is a real *gurda*,** lay the blade against your hand and it will cut deep into the flesh; mail like yours won't stop it.'

"Kazbich was silent.

" 'When I first saw your horse,' Azamat went on, 'prancing under you, his nostrils dilated and sparks flying under his hoofs, something strange happened in my soul, and I lost interest in everything. I have disdained my father's best horses, ashamed to be seen riding them, and I have been sick at heart. In my misery I have spent days on end sitting on a crag, thinking of nothing but your fleet-footed Karagyozy with his proud stride and sleek back as straight as an arrow, his blazing eyes looking straight into mine as if he wanted to speak to me. I

* "No."—*Ed.*

** A particular kind of sabre of excellent workmanship.—*Ed.*

shall die, Kazbich, if you will not sell him to me,' said Azamat in a trembling voice.

"I thought I heard him sob; and I must tell you that Azamat was a most stubborn lad and even when he was younger nothing could ever make him cry.

"In reply to his tears I heard something like a laugh.

"'Listen!' said Azamat, his voice firm now. 'You see I am ready to do anything. I could steal my sister for you if you want. How she can dance and sing! And her gold embroidery is something wonderful! The Turkish Padishah himself never had a wife like her. If you want her, wait for me tomorrow night in the gorge where the stream flows; I shall go by with her on the way to the next village—and she'll be yours. Isn't Bela worth your steed?'

"For a long, long time Kazbich was silent. At last instead of replying, he began softly singing an old song:*

*"Many fair maids in this village of mine,
Their eyes are dark pools where the stars seem to
shine.*

*Sweet flits the time when we cosset a maid,
Sweeter's the freedom of any young blade.
Wives by the dozen are purchased with gold,
A mettlesome steed is worth riches untold;
Swift o'er the plains like a whirlwind he flies,
Never betrays you, and never tells lies.'*

"In vain Azamat pleaded with him; he tried tears, flattery, and cajolery, until finally Kazbich lost patience with him:

"'Get away with you, boy! Are you mad? You could never ride my horse! He'd throw you after the first three paces and you'd smash your head against a rock.'

"'Me?' Azamat screamed in a fury, and his child's dagger rang against the coat of mail. A strong arm flung

* I apologise to my readers for having put Kazbich's song, which of course was told me in prose, into verse; but habit is second nature.—*Author's note.*

him back and he fell against the wattle fence so violently that it shook. 'Now the fun will begin,' thought I and dashed into the stable, bridled our horses and led them to the yard at the back. Two minutes later a terrific uproar broke out in the hut. This is what happened: Azamat ran into the hut in a torn *besmet* shouting that Kazbich had tried to kill him. Everybody rushed out and went for their rifles—and the fun was on! There was screaming and shouting and shots were fired, but Kazbich was already on his horse spinning around like a demon in the midst of the crowd and warding off assailants with his sabre. 'Bad business to get mixed up in this,' said I to Grigori Alexandrovich as I caught him by the arm. 'Hadn't we better clear out as fast as we can?'

"Let's wait a bit and see how it ends.'

"It's sure to end badly; that's what always happens with these Asiatics, as soon as they have their fill of drink they go slashing each other.' We mounted and rode home."

"What happened to Kazbich?" I asked impatiently.

"What can happen to these people?" replied the captain, finishing his glass of tea. "He got away, of course."

"Not even wounded, was he?" I asked.

"The Lord only knows. They're tough, the rogues! I have seen some of them in engagements; a man may be cut up into ribbons with bayonets and still he continues brandishing his sabre." After a brief silence the captain went on, stamping his foot:

"There is one thing I'll never forgive myself for. When we got back to the fort, some devil prompted me to tell Grigori Alexandrovich what I had overheard behind the fence. He laughed—the fox—though he was already cooking up a scheme."

"What was it? I should like to hear it."

"I suppose I'll have to tell you. Since I began telling the story, I might as well finish.

"Some four days later Azamat rode up to the fort. As usual, he went in to see Grigori Alexandrovich, who

always had some delicacies for him. I was there too. The talk turned to horses, and Pechorin began to praise Kazbich's horse; as spirited and graceful as an antelope the steed was, and, as Pechorin put it, there simply was no other horse like it in all the world.

"The Tatar boy's eyes lit up, but Pechorin pretended not to notice it; I tried to change the subject, but at once he brought it back to Kazbich's horse. This happened each time Azamat came. About three weeks later I noticed that Azamat was growing pale and wasting away as they do from love in novels. What was it all about?

"You see, I got the whole story later. Grigori Alexandrovich egged him on to a point when the lad was simply desperate. Finally he put it point-blank: 'I can see, Azamat, that you want that horse very badly. Yet you have as little chance of getting it as of seeing the back of your own head. Now tell me what would you give if someone gave it to you?'

" 'Anything he asks,' replied Azamat.

" 'In that case I'll get the horse for you, but on one condition. . . . Swear you will carry it out?'

" 'I swear. . . . And you must swear too!'

" 'Good! I swear you'll get the horse, only you have to give me your sister Bela in exchange. Karagyozy shall be her *kalym*!* I hope the bargain suits you.'

"Azamat was silent.

" 'You don't want to? As you wish. I thought you were a man, but I see you're still a child: you're too young to ride in the saddle.'

"Azamat flared up. 'What about my father?' he asked.

" 'Doesn't he ever go anywhere?'

" 'That's true, he does. . . .'

" 'So you agree?'

" 'I agree,' whispered Azamat, pale as death itself. 'When?'

" 'The next time Kazbich comes here; he has promised

* Property given under tribal customs by a man for his bride.—*Ed.*

to bring a dozen sheep. The rest is my affair. You take care of your end of the bargain, Azamat!"

"So they arranged the whole business, and I must say it was a bad business indeed. Later I said so to Pechorin, but he only replied that the primitive Cherkess girl ought to be happy to have such a fine husband as himself, for, after all, everybody would regard him as her husband, and that Kazbich was a brigand who should be punished anyway. Judge for yourself, what could I say against this? But at the time I knew nothing about the conspiracy. So one day Kazbich came asking whether we wanted sheep and honey, and I told him to bring some the day after. 'Azamat,' Grigori Alexandrovich said to the lad, 'tomorrow Karagyozy will be in my hands. If Bela is not here tonight you will not see the horse. . . .'

"'Good!' said Azamat and galloped back to his village. In the evening Grigori Alexandrovich armed himself and rode out of the fort. How they managed everything, I don't know—but at night they both returned and the sentry saw a woman lying across Azamat's saddle with hands and feet tied and head wrapped in a veil."

"And the horse?" I asked the captain.

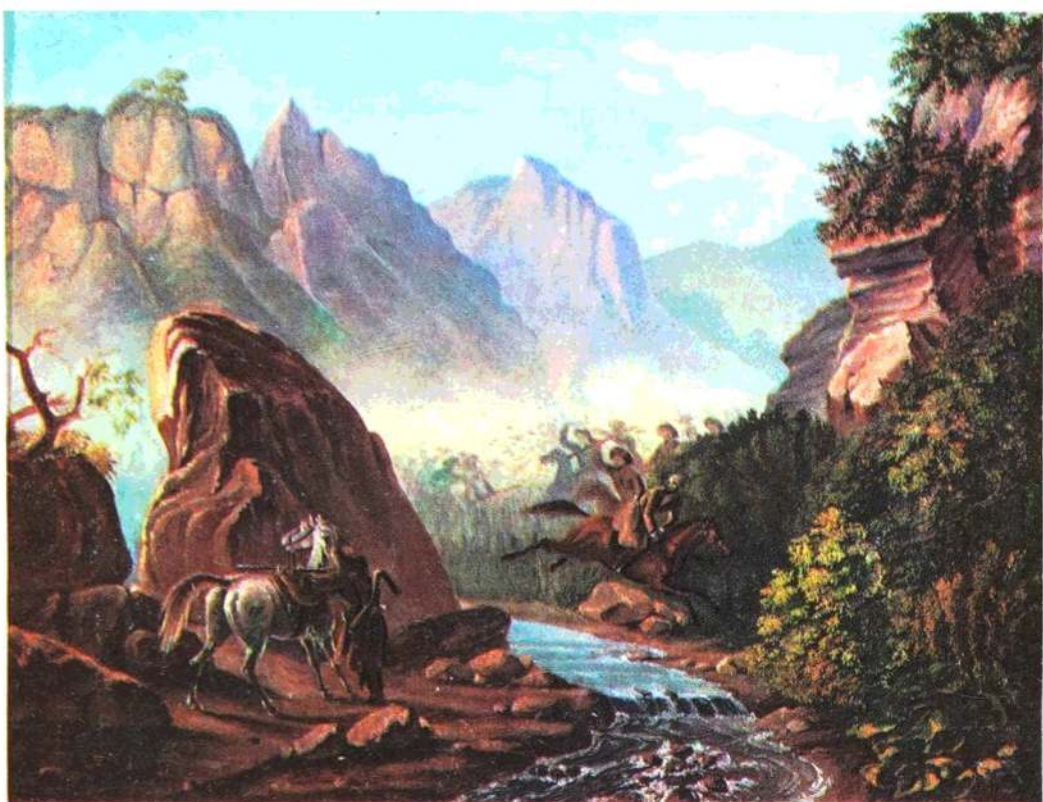
"Just a moment, just a moment. Early the next morning Kazbich came, driving along the dozen sheep he wanted to sell. Tying his horse to a fence, he came to see me and I regaled him with tea, for, scoundrel though he was, he nevertheless was a *kunak* of mine.

"We began to chat about this and that. Suddenly I saw Kazbich start; his face twisted and he dashed for the window, but it unfortunately opened to the backyard. 'What's happened?' I asked.

"'My horse . . . horse!' he said, shaking all over.

"And true enough, I heard the beat of hoofs. 'Some Cossack must have arrived.'

"'No! *Urus yaman, yaman,*' he cried and dashed out like a wild panther. In two strides he was in the courtyard; at the gates of the fort a sentry barred his way with a musket, but he leaped over the weapon and began running down the road. In the distance a cloud of dust



A skirmish in the mountains of Daghestan. The picture was painted by Lermontov during his second exile to the Caucasus when he was in action more than once. Canvas. Oils.



Tiflis. Oil painting on canvas by Lermontov. In 1837, he travelled all over the Caucasus on the trail of the Nizhni-Novgorod Dragoon Regiment, and made a stop in Tiflis.



The Daryal Gorge. Tamara's castle. A drawing made by Lermontov in 1837 during his travels.



Taman. A drawing by Lermontov.

whirled—it was Azamat urging on the spirited Karagyozy. Kazbich drew his gun from its holster and fired as he ran. For a minute he stood motionless until he was certain he had missed; then he screamed, dashed the gun to pieces against the stones, and rolled on the ground crying like a baby. . . . People from the fort gathered around him—but he did not see anyone, and after standing about for a while they all went back. I had the money for the sheep placed next to him, but he did not touch it; he only lay there face down like a corpse. Would you believe it, he lay like that the rest of the day and all through the night? Only the next morning he returned to the fort to ask whether anyone could tell him who the thief was. A sentry who had seen Azamat untie the horse and gallop off did not think it necessary to conceal the fact. When Kazbich heard the name his eyes flashed and he set out for the village where Azamat's father lived."

"What did the father do?"

"The whole trouble was that Kazbich did not find him; he had gone off somewhere for six days or so. Had he not done so could Azamat have carried off his sister?"

"The father returned to find both daughter and son gone. The lad was a wily one; he knew very well that his head wouldn't be worth anything if he got caught. So he has been missing ever since; most likely he joined some *Abrek* band and perhaps ended his mad career beyond the Terek, or maybe the Kuban. And that's no more than he deserved!

"I must admit that it wasn't easy for me either. As soon as I learned that the Cherkess girl was at Grigori Alexandrovich's, I put on my epaulettes and strapped on my sword and went to see him.

"He was lying on the bed in the first room, one hand under his head and the other holding a pipe that had gone out. The door leading to the next room was locked, and there was no key in the lock; all this I noticed at once. I coughed and stamped my heels on the threshold, but he pretended not to hear.

"'Ensign! Sir!' I said as severely as I could. 'Don't you realise that I've come to see you?'"

"'Ah, how do you do, Maxim Maximych. Have a pipe,' he replied without getting up.

"'I beg your pardon! I am no Maxim Maximych: I am a captain to you!'"

"'Oh, it's all the same. Would you care to have some tea? If you only knew what a load I've got on my mind!'"

"'I know everything,' I replied, walking up to the bed.

"'That's all the better, then. I am in no mood to go over it again.'

"'Ensign, you have committed an offence for which I too may have to answer. . . .'"

"'Well, why not? Have we not always shared everything equally?'"

"'This is no time to joke. Will you surrender your sword?'"

"'Mitka, the sword!'"

"'Mitka brought the sword. Having thus done my duty, I sat down on the bed and said: 'Listen here, Grigori Alexandrovich, you'd best admit that it's wrong.'

"'What's wrong?'"

"'To have kidnapped Bela. What a scoundrel that Azamat is! Come, now, admit it,' I said to him.

"'Why should I? She happens to please me.'

"'What would you have me reply to that? I did not know what to do. Nevertheless after a moment's silence I told him he would have to give the girl back if her father insisted.

"'I don't see why I should!'"

"'But what if he finds out that she is here?'"

"'How will he?'"

"'Again I was in a blind alley.

"'Listen, Maxim Maximych,' said Pechorin, rising, 'you're a good soul—if we give the girl to that barbarian he'll either kill her or sell her. What has been done cannot be undone, and it won't do to spoil things by

being overzealous. You keep my sword, but leave her with me. . . .’

“ ‘Supposing you let me see her,’ said I.

“ ‘She’s behind that door; I myself have been trying in vain to see her. She sits there in a corner all huddled up in her shawl and will neither speak nor look at you; she’s as timid as a gazelle. I hired the *dukhan* keeper’s wife who speaks Tatar to look after her and get her accustomed to the idea that she is mine—for she will never belong to anyone but myself,’ he added, striking the table with his fist.

“ ‘I reconciled myself to this too. . . . What would you have had me do? There are people who always get their own way.’ ”

“ ‘What happened in the end?’ ” I asked Maxim Maximych. “ ‘Did he actually win her over or did she pine away in captivity longing for her native village?’ ”

“ ‘Now why should she have longed for her native village? She could see the very same mountains from the fort as she had seen from the village, and that’s all these barbarians want. Moreover, Grigori Alexandrovich gave her some present every day. At first she proudly tossed the gifts aside without a word, whereupon they became the property of the *dukhan* keeper’s wife and stimulated her eloquence. Ah, gifts! What wouldn’t a woman do for a bit of coloured rag! But I digress. . . . Grigori Alexandrovich strove long and hard to win her; in the meantime he learned to speak Tatar and she began to understand our language. Little by little she learned to look at him, at first askance, but she was always melancholy and I too could not help feeling sad when I heard her from the next room singing her native songs in a low voice. I shall never forget a scene I once witnessed while passing the window: Bela was seated on a couch, her head bowed, and Grigori Alexandrovich stood before her. ‘Listen, my peri,’ he was saying, ‘don’t you realise that sooner or later you must be mine—why then do you torment me so? Or perhaps you love some Chechen? If you do, I will let you go home at once.’ ”

She shuddered barely perceptibly and shook her head. 'Or,' he went on, 'am I altogether hateful to you?' She sighed. 'Perhaps your faith forbids your loving me?' She grew pale but did not say a word. 'Believe me, there is only one Allah for all people, and if he permits me to love you why should he forbid you to return my love?' She looked him straight in the face as if struck by this new thought; her eyes betrayed suspicion and sought reassurance. And what eyes she had! They shone like two coals.

" 'Listen to me, sweet, kind Bela!' Pechorin continued. 'You can see how I love you. I am ready to do anything to cheer you; I want you to be happy, and if you keep on grieving, I shall die. Tell me, you will be more cheerful?' She thought for a moment, her black eyes searching his face, then smiled tenderly and nodded in agreement. He took her hand and began to persuade her to kiss him; but she resisted weakly and repeated over and over again: 'Please, please, no, no.' He became persistent; she trembled and began to sob. 'I am your captive, your slave,' she said, 'and of course you can force me.' And again there were tears.

"Grigori Alexandrovich struck his forehead with his fist and ran into the next room. I went in to him; he was gloomily pacing up and down with arms folded. 'What now, old chap?' I asked him. 'A she-devil, that's what she is!' he replied. 'But I give you my word that she will be mine!' I shook my head. 'Do you want to wager?' he said. 'Give me a week.' 'Done!' We shook on it and parted.

"The next day he sent a messenger to Kizlyar to make diverse purchases, and there was no end to the array of various kinds of Persian cloth that was brought back.

" 'What do you think, Maxim Maximych,' he said as he showed me the gifts, 'will an Asiatic beauty be able to resist a battery like this?' 'You don't know Cherkess women,' I replied. 'They're nothing like Georgian or Transcaucasian Tatar women—nothing like them. They have their own rules of conduct; different upbringing,

you know.' Grigori Alexandrovich smiled and began whistling a march air.

"It turned out that I was right: the gifts did only half the trick; she became more amiable and confiding—but nothing more. So he decided to play his last card. One morning he ordered his horse saddled, dressed in Cherkess fashion, armed himself, and went in to her. 'Bela,' he said, 'you know how I love you. I decided to carry you off believing that when you came to know me you would love me too. But I made a mistake; so, farewell, I leave you the mistress of everything I have, and if you wish, you can return to your father—you are free, I have wronged you and must be punished. Farewell, I shall ride away, where, I don't know. Perhaps it will not be long before I am cut down by a bullet or a sabre blow; when that happens, remember me and try to forgive me.' He turned away and extended his hand to her in parting. She did not take the hand, nor did she say a word. Standing behind the door I saw her through the crack, and I was sorry for her—such a deathly pallor had spread over her pretty little face. Hearing no reply, Pechorin took several steps towards the door. He was trembling, and do you know, I quite believe he was capable of actually doing what he threatened. The Lord knows that's the kind of man he was. But barely had he touched the door when she sprang up, sobbing, and threw her arms around his neck. Believe me, I also wept standing there behind the door, that is, I didn't exactly weep, but—well, anyway it was silly."

The captain fell silent.

"I might as well confess," he said after a while, tugging at his moustache, "I was annoyed because no woman had ever loved me like that."

"How long did their happiness last?" I asked.

"Well, she admitted that Pechorin had often appeared in her dreams since the day she first saw him and that no other man had ever made such an impression on her. Yes, they were happy!"

"How boring!" I exclaimed involuntarily. Indeed, I

was expecting a tragic end and it was a shock to see my hopes collapse so suddenly. "Don't tell me the father did not guess she was with you in the fort?"

"I believe he did suspect. A few days later, however, we heard that the old man had been killed. This is how it happened. . . ."

My interest was again aroused.

"I must tell you that Kazbich got the idea that Azamat had stolen the horse with his father's consent, at least I think so. So he lay in ambush one day some three versts beyond the village when the old man was returning from his futile search for his daughter. The old man had left his liegemen lagging behind and was plunged deep in thought as he rode slowly down the road through the deepening twilight, when Kazbich suddenly sprang catlike from behind a bush, leapt behind him on the horse, cut him down with a blow of his dagger and seized the reins. Some of the liegemen saw it all from a hill, but though they set out in pursuit they could not overtake Kazbich."

"So he compensated himself for the loss of his horse and took revenge as well," I said in order to draw an opinion out of my companion.

"Of course he was absolutely right according to their rights," said the captain.

I was struck by the ability of the Russian to reconcile himself to the customs of the peoples among whom he happens to live. I do not know whether this mental quality is a virtue or a vice, but it does reveal a remarkable flexibility and that sober common sense which forgives evil wherever it feels it to be necessary, or impossible to eradicate.

Meanwhile we had finished our tea. Outside the horses had been harnessed long since and were now standing shivering in the snow; the paling moon in the western sky was about to immerse itself in the black clouds that trailed like tattered bits of a rent curtain from the mountain peaks in the distance. We stepped out into the open. Contrary to my companion's prediction, the weather

had cleared and promised a calm morning. The garlands of stars, intertwined in a fantastic pattern in the distant heavens, went out one after another as the pale glimmer of the east spread out over the dark lilac sky, gradually casting its glow on the steep mountainsides blanketed by virginal snow. To right and left yawned gloomy, mysterious abysses, and the mist, coiling and twisting like a snake, crawled into them along the cracks and crevices of the cliffs as if in fearful anticipation of coming day.

There was a great peace in the heavens and on earth as there is in the hearts of men at morning prayers. Only now and then the cool east wind came in gusts ruffling the hoary manes of the horses. We set out, the five lean nags hauling our carriages with difficulty along the tortuous road up Gud-Gora. We walked behind, setting stones under the wheels when the horses could pull no longer; it seemed as if the road must lead straight to heaven, for it rose higher and higher as far as the eye could see and finally was lost in the cloud that had been resting on the mountain summit since the day before like a vulture awaiting its prey. The snow crunched underfoot; the air grew so rare that it was painful to breathe; I continually felt the blood rushing to my head, yet a feeling of elation coursed through my being and somehow it felt good to be so much above the world—a childish feeling, I admit, but as we drift farther away from the conventions of society and draw closer to nature we willy-nilly become children again: the soul is unburdened of whatever it has acquired and it becomes what it once was and what it will surely be again. Anyone who has had occasion as I have to roam in the deserted mountains, feasting his eyes upon their fantastic shapes and drinking in the invigorating air of the gorges, will understand my urge to describe, to portray, to paint these magic canvases. At last we reached the summit of Gud-Gora and paused to look around us: a grey cloud rested on the mountain top and its cold breath held the threat of an imminent blizzard; but the east was so clear and golden that we, that is, the captain and I,

promptly forgot about it. . . . Yes, the captain too: for simple hearts feel the beauty and majesty of nature a hundred times more keenly than do we, rapturous tellers of stories spoken or written.

"You are no doubt accustomed to these magnificent scenes," I said to him.

"Yes, sir, you can get accustomed even to the whining of bullets, I mean, accustomed to concealing the involuntary quickening of your pulse."

"On the contrary, I have been told that to some old soldiers it is sweet music."

"Yes, it is sweet too, if you please; but only because it makes the heart beat faster. Look," he added, pointing to the east, "what heavenly country!"

Indeed it was a panorama I can hardly hope to see again: below us lay the Koishaur Valley, the Aragva and another river tracing their course across it like two silver threads; a bluish mist crept over it, seeking refuge in the neighbouring gorge from the warm rays of the morning; to the right and to the left the mountain ridges, one higher than the other, crisscrossed and stretched out into the distance covered with snow and brush. Mountains as far as the eye could see, but no two crags alike—and all these expanses of snow burned with a rosy glow so gay and so vivid that one would fain have stayed there for ever. The sun barely showed from behind a dark-blue mountain which only the experienced eye could distinguish from a storm cloud, but above it stretched a crimson belt to which my comrade now drew my attention. "I told you," he exclaimed, "there's bad weather ahead; we'll have to hurry or it may catch us on Krestovaya. Look lively, there!" he shouted to the coachmen.

Chains were passed through the wheels for brakes to prevent them from getting out of control. Leading the horses by their bridles we began the descent. To the right of us was a cliff, and to the left an abyss so deep that an Ossetian village at the bottom looked like a swallow's nest; I shuddered at the thought that a dozen

times a year some courier rides through the dark night along this road too narrow for two carts to pass, without alighting from his jolting carriage. One of our drivers was a Russian peasant from Yaroslavl, the other an Ossetian. The Ossetian took the leading horse by the bridle after unhitching the first pair in good time and taking every other possible precaution, but our happy-go-lucky Russian did not even bother to get down from the box. When I suggested that he might have shown some concern if only for my portmanteau, which I had no desire to go down into the abyss to recover, he replied: "Don't worry, sir! With God's help we'll get there just as well as they. This is not the first time we've done it." And he was right; true, we might not have got through safely, yet we did. And if all men gave the matter more thought they would realise that life is not worth worrying over too much. . . .

Perhaps you wish to hear the story of Bela to the end? Firstly, however, I am not writing a novel but simply travel notes, and hence I cannot make the captain resume his story sooner than he actually did. So you will have to wait, or, if you wish to do so, skip a few pages; only I do not advise you to, for the crossing of Mount Krestovaya (or le Mont St. Christophe as the learned Gamba calls it) is worthy of your interest. And so we descended from Gud-Gora to Chertova-Dolina. There's a romantic name for you! Perhaps you already visualise the den of the Evil Spirit among the inaccessible crags—but if you do, you are mistaken: Chertova-Dolina derives its name from the word "*cherta*" and not "*chort*", for the boundary of Georgia once passed here.* The valley was buried under snowdrifts which gave the scene a rather strong resemblance to Saratov, Tambov and other spots *dear to us* in our mother country.

"There's Krestovaya," said the captain as we came down to Chertova-Dolina, pointing to a hill shrouded by

* A play on words in the original Russian. "Cherta" means "line" and "chort", "devil".—*Ed.*

snow. On the summit the black outline of a stone cross was visible, and past it ran a barely discernible road which was used only when the road along the mountainside was snowbound. Our drivers said that there were no snowslides yet and in order to spare the horses they took us the roundabout way. Around a bend in the road we came upon five Ossetians who offered us their services, and, seizing hold of the wheels and shouting, they began to help our carriage along. The road was dangerous indeed. To our right masses of snow hung overhead ready, it seemed, to crash down into the gorge with the first blast of wind. Some sections of the narrow road were covered with snow, which here and there gave way underfoot; others had been turned to ice under the action of the sun's rays and night frosts, so that we made headway with difficulty. The horses kept slipping, and to the left of us yawned a deep fissure with a turbulent stream at the bottom that now slipped out of sight under a crust of ice, now plunged in frothy fury amidst black boulders. It took us all of two hours to skirt Mount Krestovaya—two hours to negotiate two versts! In the meantime the clouds came lower and it began to hail and snow. The wind bursting into the gorges howled and whistled like Solovey the Brigand,* and soon the stone cross was blotted out by the mist which was coming in waves from the east, each wave thicker than the last. Incidentally, there is a queer but generally accepted legend that this cross was raised by Emperor Peter I when he travelled through the Caucasus. Yet, in the first place, Peter was only in Daghestan, and, secondly, an inscription in big letters on the cross said it had been put up on the orders of General Yermolov, in 1824, to be exact. Despite the inscription, the legend had taken such firm root that one is at a loss to know what to believe, all the more so since we are not accustomed to put our faith in inscriptions.

* Russian legendary hero, one whistle from whom was enough to knock a man down.—*Ed.*

We had another five versts to descend along the ice-coated rocky ledges and through soft snow before reaching the station at Kobi. The horses were exhausted and we thoroughly chilled, while the blizzard blew harder and harder much like our native, northern snowstorms, except that its wild refrain was sadder and more mournful. "You too, my exile," thought I, "are mourning your wide, boundless steppes where there was space to spread out your icy wings, whilst here you are choked and hemmed in like the eagle who beats against the bars of his iron cage."

"Looks bad!" the captain was saying. "Nothing but mist and snow. If we don't take care we'll find ourselves falling into a gorge or getting stuck in some hole, and the Baidara down there will probably be running too high to cross. That's Asia for you! The rivers are as unreliable as the people."

The drivers shouted and cursed as they whipped the snorting, balking horses which refused to take another step in spite of the persuasion of the whip. "Your Honour," one of the drivers finally said, "we can't reach Kobi today. Had we not better turn to the left while there is still time? Over on that slope there are some huts, I believe. Travellers always halt there in bad weather." Then he added, pointing to an Ossetian: "They say they will guide us there if you give them some money for vodka."

"I know it, brother, I know without you telling me!" said the captain. "These rogues! They always think up something to pick up a tip."

"All the same you have to admit that we'd be worse off without them," said I.

"Maybe, maybe," he muttered, "but I know these guides! They can tell by instinct when to take advantage of you; as if you couldn't find your way without them."

So we turned to the left and somehow after a good deal of trouble made our way to the scanty refuge consisting of two huts built of slabs and stones and surrounded by a wall of the same material. The tattered

inhabitants gave us a cordial welcome. Later I found out that the government pays and feeds them on condition that they take in wayfarers who are caught by the storm.

"It's all for the best," said I, taking a seat by the fire. "Now you will be able to tell me the rest of the story about Bela; I am sure that wasn't the end of it."

"What makes you so sure?" replied the captain, with a sly smile and a twinkle in his eye.

"Because things don't happen like that. Anything that begins so strangely must end in the same way."

"Well, you guessed right. . . ."

"Glad to hear it."

"It's all very well for you to be glad, but for me it is really sad to recall. She was a fine girl, Bela was! I grew as fond of her in the end as if she were my own daughter, and she loved me too. I ought to tell you that I have no family; I haven't heard about my father or mother for some twelve years now, and it didn't occur to me to get myself a wife earlier—and now, you must admit, it would no longer be seemly. So I was happy to have found someone to pet. She would sing to us or dance the Lezghinka. . . . And how she danced! I've seen our provincial fine ladies and once some twenty years ago I was at the Nobles' Club in Moscow, but none of them could hold a candle to her. Grigori Alexandrovich dressed her up like a doll, petted and fondled her, and she grew so lovely that it was amazing. The tan disappeared from her face and arms, and her cheeks grew rosy. . . . How gay she was and how she used to tease me, the little vixen. . . . May God forgive her!"

"What happened when you told her about her father's death?"

"We kept it from her for a long time, until she became accustomed to her new position. And when she was told, she cried for a couple of days and then forgot about it.

"For about four months everything went splendidly. Grigori Alexandrovich, I must have already told you, had a passion for hunting. Some irresistible force used to draw him to the forest to stalk wild boar or goats, but now he

scarcely ventured beyond the ramparts. Then I noticed he was growing restless again; he would pace up and down the room with his arms folded behind his back. One day without saying a word to anyone he took his gun and went out, and was gone all morning; that happened once, twice, and then more and more frequently. Things are going badly, I thought, something must have come between them!

"One morning when I dropped in to see them I found Bela sitting on the bed wearing a black silk *besmet* and looking so pale and sad that I was really alarmed.

" 'Where's Pechorin?' I asked.

" 'Hunting.'

" 'When did he leave? Today?'

"She did not reply, it seemed difficult for her to speak.

" 'No, yesterday,' she finally said with a deep sigh.

" 'I hope nothing has happened to him.'

" 'All day yesterday I thought and thought,' she said, her eyes full of tears, 'and imagined all kinds of terrible things. First I thought a wild boar had injured him, then that the Chechen had carried him off to the mountains. . . . And now I'm beginning to think that he doesn't love me.'

" 'Truly, my dear, you couldn't have imagined anything worse!'

"She burst into tears, and then proudly raised her head, dried her eyes, and continued:

" 'If he doesn't love me, what prevents him from sending me home? I am not forcing myself on him. And if this goes on I shall leave myself; I am not his slave, I am a prince's daughter!'

"I tried to reason with her. 'Listen, Bela, he can't sit here all the time as if tied to your apron strings. He's a young man and likes to hunt. He'll go and he'll come back, but if you are going to mope he'll only get tired of you the sooner.'

" 'You are right,' she replied. 'I shall be gay.' Laughing, she seized her tambourine and began to sing and dance for me. But very soon she threw herself on the bed again and hid her face in her hands.

"What was I to do? You see, I had never had dealings with women. I racked my brains for some way to comfort her but could not think of anything. For a time we both were silent. A most unpleasant situation, I assure you!

"At length I said: 'Would you like to go for a walk with me on the rampart? The weather's fine.' It was September, and the day was really wonderful, sunny but not too hot, the mountains as clearly visible as if laid out on a platter. We went out, and in silence walked up and down the breastwork. After a while she sat down on the turf, and I sat next to her. It's really funny to recall how I fussed over her like a nursemaid.

"Our fort was situated on an elevation, and the view from the parapet was excellent: on one side was a wide open space intersected by gullies and ending in a forest that stretched all the way to the top of the mountain ridge, and here and there on this expanse you could see the smoke of villages and droves of grazing horses; on the other side flowed a small rivulet bordered by dense brush that covered the flinty hills merging with the main chain of the Caucasus. We were sitting in a corner of a bastion whence we had a perfect view of either side. As I scanned the landscape, a man riding a grey horse emerged from the woods and came closer and closer, until he finally stopped on the far side of the rivulet some hundred sagues or so from where we were and began spinning around on his horse like mad. What the devil was that?

"'Your eyes are younger than mine, Bela, see if you can make out that horseman,' said I. 'I wonder whom he is honouring with a visit.'

"She looked and cried out: 'It's Kazbich!'

"'Ah, the brigand! Has he come to mock at us?' Now I could see it was Kazbich: the same swarthy features, and as tattered and dirty as ever. 'That's my father's horse,' Bela said, seizing my arm; she trembled like a leaf and her eyes flashed. 'Aha, my little one,' thought I, 'brigand blood tells in you too.'

“‘Come here,’ I called to a sentry, ‘take aim and knock that fellow off for me and you’ll get a ruble in silver.’ ‘Yes, Your Honour, only he doesn’t stay still. . . .’ ‘Tell him to,’ said I laughing. ‘Hey, there!’ shouted the sentry waving his arm, ‘wait a minute, will you, stop spinning like a top!’ Kazbich actually paused to listen, probably thinking we wanted to parley, the insolent beggar! My grenadier took aim . . . bang!.. and missed, for as soon as the powder flashed in the pan, Kazbich gave a jab to the horse making it leap aside. He stood up in his stirrups, shouted something in his own language, shook his whip menacingly in the air—and in a flash was gone.

“‘You ought to be ashamed of yourself!’ I said to the sentry.

“‘Your Honour! He’s gone off to die,’ he replied. ‘Such a cussed lot they are you can’t kill them with one shot.’

“A quarter of an hour later Pechorin returned from the chase. Bela ran to meet him and threw her arms around his neck, and not a single complaint, not a single reproach for his long absence did I hear. . . . Even I had lost patience with him. ‘Sir,’ said I, ‘Kazbich was on the other side of the river just now and we fired at him; you could easily have run into him too. These mountaineers are vengeful people, and do you think he does not suspect you helped Azamat? I’ll wager he saw Bela here. And I happen to know that a year ago he was very much attracted by her—told me so himself, in fact. Had he had any hope of raising a substantial *kalym* he surely would have asked for her in marriage. . . .’ Pechorin was grave now. ‘Yes,’ he said, ‘we have to be more careful. . . . Bela, after today you must not go out on the rampart any more.’

“That evening I had a long talk with him; it grieved me that he had changed toward the poor girl, for besides being out hunting half the time, he began to treat her coldly, rarely showing her any affection. She began to waste away visibly, her face grew drawn, and her eyes lost their lustre. Whenever I asked her, ‘Why are you sighing, Bela? Are you sad?’ she would reply ‘No.’ ‘Do

you want anything?' 'No!' 'Are you grieving for your kinsfolk?' 'I have no kinsfolk.' For days on end you couldn't get more than 'yes' or 'no' out of her.

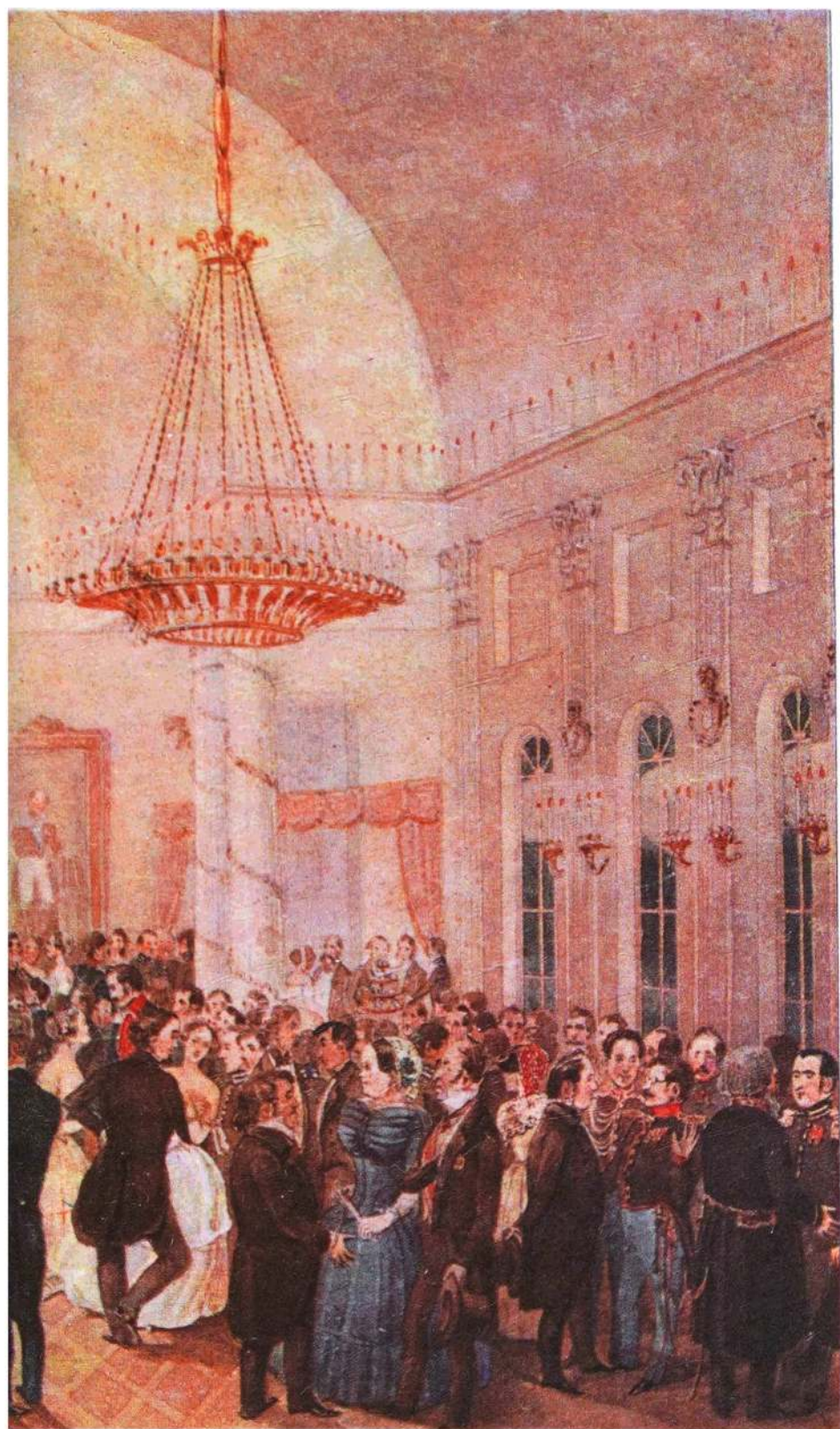
"I resolved to have a talk with him about this, 'Listen, Maxim Maximych,' he replied, 'I have an unfortunate character; whether it is my upbringing that made me like that or God who created me so, I do not know. I know only that if I cause unhappiness to others I myself am no less unhappy. I realise this is poor consolation for them—but the fact remains that it is so. In my early youth after leaving the guardianship of my parents, I plunged into all the pleasures money could buy, and naturally these pleasures grew distasteful to me. Then I went into society, but soon enough grew tired of it; I fell in love with beautiful society women and was loved by them, but their love only spurred on my ambition and vanity while my heart remained desolate. . . . I began to read and to study, but wearied of learning too; I saw that neither fame nor happiness depended on it in the slightest, for the happiest people were the ignorant, and fame was a matter of luck, to achieve which you only had to be shrewd. And I grew bored. . . . Soon I was transferred to the Caucasus; this was the happiest time of my life. I hoped that boredom would not survive under Chechen bullets—but in vain; in a month I had become so accustomed to their whine and the proximity of death that, to tell the truth, the mosquitoes bothered me more, and life became more boring than ever because I had now lost practically my last hope. When I saw Bela at my home, when I held her on my lap and first kissed her raven locks, I foolishly thought she was an angel sent down to me by a compassionate Providence. . . . Again I erred: the love of a barbarian girl is little better than that of a well-born lady; the ignorance and simplicity of the one are as boring as the coquetry of the other. I still love her, if you wish, I am grateful to her for a few rather blissful moments, I am ready to give my life for her, but I am bored with her. . . . I don't know whether I am a fool or a scoundrel; but the fact is that I am to



Mikhail Lermontov in 1839. Watercolour portrait by Klunder in St. Petersburg. Alexander Klunder, who was in the Guards regiment where Lermontov served upon return from his first exile in the Caucasus, made a series of portraits of their fellow officers.



A ball in St. Petersburg. Watercolour by an unknown painter. Lermontov came to St. Petersburg for the last time early in 1841. It was considered an act of effrontery on the part of the poet who had fallen into disgrace to come to this brilliant ball, and within 48 hours he was banished to the Caucasus again.





Vissarion Belinsky. Famous critic. Belinsky visited Lermontov at Ordonnance House where the poet was under arrest for his duel with de Barante. Belinsky wrote: "I visited him in incarceration the other day. A deep and mighty spirit. I argued with him, and it was a relief to see in his rationalistic coolness and rancorous attitude to life and people the seeds of a profound faith in the eminence of both."

be pitied as much, if not more than she. My soul has been warped by the world, my mind is restless, my heart insatiable; nothing suffices me: I grow accustomed to sorrow as readily as to joy, and my life becomes emptier from day to day. Only one expedient is left for me, and that is to travel. As soon as possible I shall set out—not for Europe, God forbid—but for America, Arabia, India—and perhaps I shall die somewhere on the road! At least I am sure that with the help of storms and bad roads this last resort will not soon cease to be a consolation.’ He talked long in this vein and his words seared themselves in my memory for it was the first time I had heard such talk from a man of twenty-five, and, I hope to God, the last. Amazing! You probably were in the capital recently; perhaps you can tell me,” the captain went on, addressing me, “whether the young people there are all like that?”

I replied that there are many who say the same, and that most likely some of them are speaking the truth; that, on the whole, disillusionment, having begun like all vogues in the upper strata of society, had descended to the lower which wear it threadbare, and that now those who are really bored the most endeavour to conceal that misfortune as if it were a vice. The captain did not understand these subtleties, and he shook his head and smiled slyly:

“It was the French, I suppose, who made boredom fashionable?”

“No, the English.”

“Ah, so that’s it!” he replied. “Of course, they’ve always been inveterate drunkards!”

Involuntarily I recalled one Moscow lady who claimed Byron was nothing more than a drunkard. The captain’s remark however, was more excusable, for in order to abstain from drink he naturally tried to reassure himself that all misfortunes in the world are caused by intemperance.

“Kazbich did not come again,” he went on with his story. “Still, for some unknown reason, I could not get

rid of the idea that his visit had not been purposeless and that he was scheming something evil.

"Once Pechorin persuaded me to go hunting wild boar with him. I tried to resist, for what was a wild boar to me, but finally he did make me go with him. We set out early in the morning, taking five soldiers with us. Until ten o'clock we poked about the reeds and the woods without seeing a single animal. 'What do you say to turning back?' said I. 'What's the use of being stubborn? You can see for yourself it's an unlucky day.' But Grigori Alexandrovich did not want to return empty-handed in spite of the heat and fatigue.... That's how he was; if he set his mind on something, he had to get it; his mother must have spoiled him as a child.... At last around noon we came upon the cursed boar—bang!.. bang!.. but no: the beast slipped into the reeds... yes, it was indeed our unlucky day. After a bit of a rest we set out for home.

"We rode side by side, in silence, reins hanging loose, and had almost reached the fort, though we could not yet see it for the brush, when a shot rang out. We looked at each other, and the same suspicion flashed through our minds. Galloping in the direction of the sound, we saw a group of soldiers huddled together on the rampart, pointing to the field where a horseman was careering into the distance at breakneck speed with something white across his saddle. Grigori Alexandrovich yelled not a whit worse than any Chechen, drew his gun from its holster and dashed in pursuit, and I after him.

"Luckily, because of our poor hunting luck, our horses were quite fresh; they strained under the saddle, and with every moment we gained on our quarry. Finally I recognised Kazbich, though I could not make out what he was holding in front of him. I drew abreast of Pechorin and shouted to him: 'It's Kazbich!' He looked at me, nodded and struck his horse with the crop.

"At last we were within gunshot of Kazbich. Whether his horse was exhausted or whether it was worse than ours I do not know, but he was unable to get much

speed out of the animal in spite of his efforts to urge it on. I am sure he was thinking of his Karagyozy then. . . .

"I looked up and saw Pechorin aiming. 'Don't shoot!' I yelled. 'Save the charge, we'll catch up with him soon enough.' That's youth for you: always foolhardy at the wrong time. . . . But the shot rang out and the bullet wounded the horse in a hind leg; the animal made another dozen leaps before it stumbled and fell on its knees. Kazbich sprang from the saddle, and now we saw he was holding a woman bound in a veil in his arms. It was Bela . . . poor Bela! He shouted something to us in his own language and raised his dagger over her. . . . There was no time to waste and I fired at random. I must have hit him in the shoulder, for his arm suddenly dropped. When the smoke dispersed there was the wounded horse lying on the ground and Bela next to it, while Kazbich, who had thrown away his gun, was scrambling up a cliff through the underbrush like a cat. I wanted to pick him off but my gun was unloaded now. We slipped out of the saddle and ran toward Bela. The poor girl lay motionless, blood streaming from her wound. The villain! Had he struck her in the heart, it all would have been over in a moment, but to stab her in the back in the foulest way! She was unconscious. We tore the veil into strips and bandaged the wound as tightly as we could. In vain did Pechorin kiss her cold lips; nothing could bring her back to consciousness.

"Pechorin mounted his horse and I raised her up from the ground, somehow managing to place her in front of him in the saddle. He put his arm around her and we started back. After several minutes of silence, Grigori Alexandrovich spoke: 'Listen, Maxim Maximych, we'll never get her home alive at this pace.' 'You're right,' I said, and we spurred the horses to full gallop. At the fort gates a crowd was awaiting us. We carried the wounded girl gently into Pechorin's quarters and sent for the surgeon. Although he was drunk, he came at our summons, and after examining the wound said the girl could not live more than a day. But he was wrong. . . ."

"She recovered, then?" I asked the captain seizing his arm, glad in spite of myself.

"No," he replied, "the surgeon was wrong only in that she lived another two days."

"But tell me how did Kazbich manage to kidnap her?"

"It was like this: disobeying Pechorin's instructions, she had left the fort and gone to the river. It was very hot, and she had sat down on a rock and dipped her feet into the water. Kazbich crept up, seized and gagged her, dragged her into the bushes, jumped on his horse and galloped off. She managed to scream, however, and the sentries gave the alarm, fired after him but missed, and that's when we arrived on the scene."

"Why did Kazbich want to carry her off?"

"My dear sir! These Cherkess are notorious thieves. Their fingers itch for anything that lies unguarded; whether they need it or not, they steal—they just can't help themselves! Besides he had long had his eye on Bela."

"And she died?"

"Yes, but she suffered a great deal, and we too were worn out watching her. About ten o'clock at night she regained consciousness; we were sitting at her bedside. As soon as she opened her eyes, she asked for Pechorin. 'I am here, beside you, my *jánechka*,' (that is, darling in our language) he replied taking her hand. 'I shall die,' she said. We began to reassure her, saying that the surgeon had promised to cure her without fail, but she shook her head and turned to the wall. She did not want to die!

"During the night she grew delirious. Her head was on fire and every now and then she shook with fever. She was now talking incoherently about her father and brother; she wanted to go back to her mountains and home. . . . Then she also talked about Pechorin, calling him all kinds of tender names or reproaching him for not loving his *janechka* any more. . . .

"He listened in silence, his head resting on his hands. But throughout it all I did not notice a single tear on

his lashes; whether he was actually incapable of weeping or whether he held himself in check, I do not know. As for myself, I had never witnessed anything more heart-rending.

"By morning the delirium passed. For about an hour she lay motionless, pale and so weak that her breathing was barely perceptible. Presently she felt better and began to speak again, but can you guess of what? Such thoughts can occur only to the dying. She regretted that she was not a Christian and that in the world beyond her soul would never meet Grigori Alexandrovich's, that some other woman would be his soulmate in paradise. It occurred to me that she might be baptised before death, but when I suggested this she gazed at me in indecision for a long time, unable to say a word. At last she replied that she would die in the faith she had been born. So the whole day passed. How she changed in that day! Her pallid cheeks grew sunken, her eyes seemed to become larger and larger, and her lips were burning. The fever within her was like a red-hot iron pressing upon her breast.

"The second night came, and we sat at her bedside without closing an eyelid. She was in terrible agony, she moaned, but as soon as the pain subsided a little she tried to assure Grigori Alexandrovich that she was feeling better, urged him to get some sleep, and kissed his hand and clung to it with her own. Just before daybreak the agony of death set in, and she tossed on the bed, tearing off the bandage so that the blood flowed again. When the wound was dressed she calmed down for a moment and asked Pechorin to kiss her. He knelt next to the bed, raised her head from the pillow and pressed his lips against hers, which were now growing chill; she entwined her trembling arms tightly around his neck as if by this kiss she wished to give her soul to him. Yes, it was good that she died! What would have happened to her had Grigori Alexandrovich left her? And that was bound to happen sooner or later. . . .

"The first half of the next day she was quiet, silent

and submissive in spite of the way our surgeon tortured her with poultices and medicine. 'My good man!' I protested. 'You yourself said she would not live, why then all these medicines of yours?' 'Got to do it, just the same, Maxim Maximych,' he replied, 'so that my conscience should be at peace.' Conscience indeed!

"In the afternoon she was tortured by thirst. We opened the windows, but it was hotter outside than in the room. We placed ice next to her bed, but nothing helped. I knew that this unbearable thirst was a sign that the end was approaching, and I said so to Pechorin. 'Water, water,' she repeated hoarsely, raising herself from the bed.

"He went white as a sheet, seized a glass, filled it with water, and gave it to her. I buried my face in my hands and began to recite a prayer, I can't remember which. Yes, sir, I had been through a great deal in my time, had seen men die in hospitals and on the battlefield, but it had been nothing like this! I must confess that there was something else that made me sad; not once before her death did she remember me, and I think I loved her like a father. Well. . . . May God forgive her! But then who am I that anyone should remember me on his deathbed?

"As soon as she had drunk the water she felt better, and some three minutes later she passed away. We pressed a mirror to her lips, but nothing showed on it. I led Pechorin out of the room, and then we walked on the fort wall, pacing back and forth side by side for a long while without uttering a word, arms crossed behind our backs. It angered me to detect no sign of emotion on his face, for in his place I should have died of grief. Finally, he sat down on the ground in the shade and began to trace some design in the sand with a stick. I began to speak, wishing to console him, more for the sake of good form than anything else, you know, whereupon he looked up and laughed. . . . That laugh sent cold shivers running up and down my spine. . . . I went to order the coffin.

"I confess that it was partly for diversion that I occupied myself with this business. I covered the coffin with a piece of tarlatan I had and ornamented it with some Cherkess silver lace Grigori Alexandrovich had bought for her.

"Early the next morning we buried her beyond the fort, next to the spot on the riverbank where she had sat that last time; the small grave is now surrounded by white acacia and elder bushes. I wanted to put up a cross, but that was a bit awkward, you know, for after all she was not a Christian. . . ."

"What did Pechorin do?" I asked.

"He was ailing for a long time and lost weight, the poor chap. But we never spoke about Bela after that. I saw it would be painful for him, so why should I have mentioned her? Some three months later he was ordered to join the . . . regiment, and he went to Georgia. I have not seen him since. Oh yes, I remember someone telling me recently that he had returned to Russia, though it had not been mentioned in the corps orders. In general it takes a long time before news reaches us here."

Here, probably to dispel his sad memories, he launched upon a long dissertation concerning the disadvantages of hearing year-old tidings.

I neither interrupted him nor listened.

An hour later it was already possible to continue our journey. The blizzard had died down and the sky cleared up, and we set out. On the road, however, I could not help directing the conversation back to Bela and Pechorin.

"Did you ever happen to hear what became of Kazbich?" I asked.

"Kazbich? Really, I don't know. I have heard that the Shapsugi on the right flank of the line have a Kazbich, a bold fellow who wears a red *besmet*, rides at a trot under our fire and bows with exaggerated politeness whenever a bullet whistles near him, but I doubt whether it's the same man."

Maxim Maximych and I parted at Kobi, for I took

the post chaise and he could not keep pace with me because of his heavy baggage. At the time we did not think we would ever meet again, yet we did, and if you wish, I will tell you about it, but that is a story in itself. . . . You must admit, however, that Maxim Maximych is a man you can respect. If you do admit it, I shall be amply rewarded for my story, long though it may be.

II

MAXIM MAXIMYCH

After parting with Maxim Maximych, I made good time through the Terek and Daryal gorges and had breakfast at Kazbek and tea at Lars, driving into Vladikavkaz by supper-time. I shall not bore you with descriptions of mountains, exclamations that mean nothing and canvases that convey nothing, especially to those who have never been in these parts, or with statistical observations which, I am certain, no one will bother to read.

I stopped at a hotel where all travellers stay and where, incidentally, there is no one to serve you a roast pheasant or a plate of cabbage soup, for the three invalids in charge are either so stupid or so drunk that there is no sense to be had from them.

I was told that I should have to stop there for another three days, for the *okazia* from Yekaterinograd had not come in yet, and hence could not set out on the return trip. What an *okazia*! But a bad pun is no consolation to a Russian and in order to while away the time I decided to write down Maxim Maximych's story about Bela quite unaware that it would turn out to be the first link in a long chain of tales. So you see how an occurrence insignificant in itself may have grave consequences. . . . But perhaps you do not know what an *okazia** is?

* *Okazia* means "chance", while the expression *What an okazia* means "What a mischance!"—*Ed.*

It is an escort of half a company of infantry and a gun under whose protection the caravans cross Kabarda from Vladikavkaz to Yekaterinograd.

The first day was very dull, but early the next morning a carriage drove into the yard. It was Maxim Maximych! We greeted each other like old friends. I offered him the use of my room. He did not stand on ceremony, he even clapped me on the shoulder, and his mouth twisted in what passed for a smile. A queer chap!

Maxim Maximych was well versed in the culinary arts and turned out a wonderful roast pheasant with an excellent pickled cucumber sauce. I must admit that without him I would have had to content myself with a cold snack. A bottle of Kakhetian helped us to overlook the modesty of the meal which consisted of only one course. Afterwards we lit our pipes and settled down for a smoke, I near the window and he next to the stove where a fire was going for the day was chilly and raw. We sat in silence; what was there to say?... He had already told me all that was interesting about himself, and I had nothing to tell him. I looked out of the window. A multitude of low houses, sprawling along the shore of the Terek, which here spreads wider and wider, were visible through the trees, while in the distance was the blue serrated wall of the mountains with Kazbek in its white cardinal's hat peeping over it. Mentally I bid them good-bye; I felt sorry to leave them....

We sat thus for a long time. The sun was setting behind the frigid peaks and a milky mist was spreading through the valleys when we heard the tinkling of bells and the shouting of drivers outside. Several carts with grimy Armenians drove into the courtyard followed by an empty carriage whose lightness, comfort and elegance gave it a distinctly foreign air. Behind walked a man with a huge moustache wearing a dolman; he was rather well dressed for a manservant; but the way he knocked the ashes from his pipe and shouted at the coachman left no doubt as to his station. He was obviously the pampered servant of an indolent gentleman—something of a

Russian Figaro. "Tell me, my good man," I called to him from the window, "is it the *okazia*?" He looked at me rather insolently, straightened his neckerchief and turned away. An Armenian who had been walking beside him smiled and replied for him that it was the *okazia* and that it would set out on the return trip the next morning. "Thank God!" said Maxim Maximych who had just walked to the window. "A fine carriage!" he added. "Probably some official on his way to conduct a hearing in Tiflis. You can see he doesn't know our hills. No, my dear fellow, they're not for the likes of you; even an English carriage wouldn't stand the jolting! I wonder who it is—let's find out. . . ." We went into the corridor, at the far end of which a door was open into a side room. The valet and the driver were carrying in portmanteaus.

"Listen, friend," the captain asked the valet, "whose is that fine carriage, eh? A splendid carriage indeed!" The valet muttered something inaudible without turning and went on unstrapping a case. This was too much for Maxim Maximych, who tapped the insolent fellow on the shoulder and said: "I am talking to you, man. . . ."

"Whose carriage? My master's."

"And who is your master?"

"Pechorin."

"What did you say? Pechorin? Good God! Did he ever serve in the Caucasus?" Maxim Maximych exclaimed, pulling at my sleeve. His eyes lit up with joy.

"I believe so . . . but I haven't been with him long."

"Well, well, there you are! Grigori Alexandrovich is his name, isn't it? Your master and I used to know each other well," he added, with a friendly slap on the valet's shoulder that nearly made him lose his balance.

"Excuse me, sir, you are in my way," said the latter, frowning.

"Don't be absurd, man! Don't you know I am an old friend of your master's, we lived together, too. Now, where can I find him?"

The servant announced that Pechorin had stayed behind to dine and spend the night with Colonel N.

"Will he not be here tonight?" said Maxim Maximych. "Or perhaps you, my good man, will have some reason to see him? If you do, tell him Maxim Maximych is here; you just tell him that and he'll know.... I'll give you eighty kopecks for vodka...."

The valet put on a superior air on hearing this modest offer, but nevertheless promised Maxim Maximych to do as he asked.

"He'll come at once, I warrant!" Maxim Maximych told me triumphantly. "I'll go out to the gates to meet him. Pity I don't know N."

Maxim Maximych sat down on a bench outside the gate and I went into my room. I must admit that I too awaited the appearance of this Pechorin with some eagerness, for though the captain's story had not given me too favourable a portrait of the man, some of his traits nevertheless struck me as quite remarkable. In an hour one of the invalids brought in a steaming samovar and a teapot. "Maxim Maximych, will you have some tea?" I called to him from the window.

"Thank you, I really don't care for any."

"You'd better have some. It's late already and getting chilly."

"No, thank you...."

"Well, as you wish!" I said and sat down to tea alone. In ten minutes or so the old man came in. "I suppose you are right," he said. "Better have some tea.... You see, I was waiting. His man has been gone a long time; looks as if something has detained him."

He hastily gulped down a cup of tea, refused a second, and went back to the gate, obviously upset. It was clear that the old man was hurt by Pechorin's unconcern, all the more so since he had spoken to me so recently about their friendship and only an hour before had been certain that Pechorin would come running as soon as he heard his name.

It was dark when I again opened the window and

called to remind Maxim Maximych that it was time to retire. He muttered something in reply and I urged him again to come in, but he did not answer.

Leaving a candle on the bench, I lay down on the couch, wrapped myself in my greatcoat and was soon asleep. I would have slept peacefully all night had not Maxim Maximych awakened me when he came in very late. He threw his pipe on the table, began pacing up and down the room, then tinkered with the stove. Finally he lay down, coughing, spitting and tossing about for a long time.

"Bedbugs bothering you?" I asked.

"Yes, bedbugs," he replied with a heavy sigh.

I woke up early next morning but Maxim Maximych had already risen. I found him sitting on the bench at the gate. "I've got to see the commandant," he said, "so if Pechorin comes will you please send for me?"

I promised to do so. He ran off as if his limbs had regained the strength and agility of youth.

It was a fresh, fine morning. Golden clouds piled up on the mountains in a phantom range of summits. In front of the gates was a broad square, and beyond it the market place was seething with people, for it was Sunday. Bare-footed Ossetian boys, birchbark baskets laden with honeycombs strapped to their backs, crowded around me, but I drove them away for I was too preoccupied to give them much thought; the good captain's disquietude was beginning to claim me too.

Ten minutes had not passed when the man for whom we had been waiting appeared at the far end of the square. With him was Colonel N., who left him at the hotel and turned toward the fort. I immediately sent one of the invalids for Maxim Maximych.

Pechorin was met by his valet who reported that the horses would be ready in a moment, handed him a box of cigars and, having received a few instructions, retired to carry them out. His master lit a cigar, yawned once or twice and sat down on a bench on the other side of the gate. Now I should like to draw you his portrait.

He was of medium stature; his erect, lithe figure and broad shoulders suggested a strong physique equal to all the hardships of the road and variations of climate, unweakened by either the dissolute life of the capital or emotional conflicts. His dusty velvet coat was open except for the last two buttons, revealing an expanse of dazzlingly white linen that betrayed the habits of a gentleman. His soiled gloves seemed to have been made for his small, aristocratic hands, and when he pulled off a glove, I was amazed at the slenderness of his white fingers. His walk was careless and indolent, but I noticed he did not swing his arms—a sure sign of a certain reticence of character. But these are my personal opinions based on my own observations, and I cannot compel you to accept them blindly. When he sank down on the bench his erect frame sagged as if his back was spineless; his whole posture now betrayed some nervous debility; he sat as a thirty-year-old Balzac coquette might sit in a cushioned easy chair after an exhausting ball. At first glance I should not have given him more than twenty-three years, though later I was ready to grant him thirty. There was something childlike in his smile. His skin was as delicate as a woman's, and his naturally curly fair hair made a pleasing frame for his pale, noble brow on which only careful scrutiny could disclose a fine network of wrinkles that probably were a good deal more in evidence at times of anger or spiritual disquietude. In spite of his light hair, his moustache and eyebrows were black—as much a sign of pedigree in a man as a black mane and tail are in a white horse. To complete the portrait, I shall say that he had a slightly turned-up nose and that his teeth were dazzlingly white and his eyes hazel—but about his eyes I must say a few more words.

Firstly, they did not laugh when he did. Have you ever had occasion to observe this peculiarity in people? It is a sign either of evil nature or deep constant sadness. They shone with a phosphorescent glow, if one may so put it, under half-closed eyelids. It was no reflection

of spiritual warmth or fertile imagination; it was the flash of smooth steel, blinding but cold. His glance was brief but piercing and oppressive, it had the disturbing effect of an indiscreet question, and might have seemed challenging had it not been so calmly casual. Perhaps all these observations came to my mind only because I happened to know some details about his life, and another person might have obtained an entirely different impression, but since you will not learn about him from anyone else, you will have to be satisfied with this portrayal. I must say in conclusion that, on the whole, he was handsome indeed and had one of those unusual faces that are particularly pleasing to ladies.

The horses were harnessed, the bell attached to the shaft bow tinkled, and the valet had already reported twice to Pechorin that the carriage was waiting, but still there was no sign of Maxim Maximych. Luckily Pechorin was deep in thought; he gazed at the blue jagged ridge of the Caucasus apparently in no hurry to be on his way. I crossed over to him. "If you would care to wait a while," I said, "you will have the pleasure of meeting an old friend...."

"Ah, that's right!" he replied quickly. "I was told about him yesterday. But where is he?" I looked out over the square and saw Maxim Maximych running towards us for all he was worth.... In a few minutes he had reached us. He could barely catch his breath, beads of perspiration rolled down his face, damp strands of grey hair that had escaped from under his cap were plastered to his forehead, and his knees shook. He was about to throw his arms around Pechorin's neck, but the latter extended his hand rather coldly, though his smile was pleasant enough. For a moment the captain was dumbfounded, then eagerly gripped the hand with both of his. He was still unable to speak.

"This is a pleasure, dear Maxim Maximych. How are you?" said Pechorin.

"And you..." faltered the old man, tears welling up

in his eyes. "It's a long time ... a very long time.... But where are you off to?"

"On my way to Persia ... and farther...."

"Not immediately, I hope? Won't you stay a while? We haven't seen each other for so long...."

"I must go, Maxim Maximych," was the reply.

"My God, what is the hurry? I have so much to tell you and so many questions to ask.... How are things, anyway? Retired, eh? What have you been doing?"

"I've been bored to death," replied Pechorin, smiling.

"Remember how we used to live in the fort? Wonderful hunting country, wasn't it? How you loved to hunt! Remember Bela?"

Pechorin paled a little and turned away.

"Yes, I remember," he said, deliberately yawning almost in the same breath.

Maxim Maximych urged him to stay on for another hour or two. "We'll have a fine dinner," he said. "I have two pheasants and the Kakhetian here is excellent ... not the same as in Georgia, of course, but the best to be had here. And we could talk ... you will tell me about your stay in St. Petersburg, won't you?"

"I really have nothing to tell, dear Maxim Maximych. And I have to say good-bye now, for I must be off.... In rather a hurry.... It was kind of you not to have forgotten me," he added, taking the old man's hand.

The old man frowned. He was both grieved and hurt, though he did his best to conceal his feelings. "Forgotten!" he muttered. "No, I've forgotten nothing. Oh well, never mind.... Only I did not expect our meeting would be like this."

"Come, now," said Pechorin, embracing him in a friendly way. "I don't think I have changed. At any rate, it can't be helped. We all are destined to go our several ways. God knows whether we'll meet again." This he said as he climbed into the carriage and the coachman was already gathering in the reins.

"Wait a minute, wait a minute!" Maxim Maximych suddenly shouted, seizing hold of the carriage door. "It

completely slipped my mind. . . . I still have your papers, Grigori Alexandrovich. . . . Been carrying them around with me. . . . Thought I'd find you in Georgia, never dreaming the Lord would have us meet here. . . . What shall I do with them?"

"Whatever you wish," replied Pechorin. "Farewell!"

"So you are off to Persia. . . . When do you expect to be back?" Maxim Maximych shouted after him.

The carriage was already some distance off, but Pechorin waved in a way that could well be interpreted to mean: "I doubt whether I shall return, nor is there any reason why I should!"

Long after the tinkling of the bell and the clatter of wheels against the flinty surface of the road had faded into the distance, the poor old man stood glued to the spot, lost in thought.

"Yes," he said at last, trying his best to preserve a nonchalant air though tears of disappointment still showed in his eyes, "we were friends, of course, but what is friendship nowadays? What am I to him? I am neither rich nor titled, and besides, I am far too old. What a fop his visit to St. Petersburg has made him! Look at that carriage, and the pile of luggage . . . and the haughty valet!" This he said with an ironic smile. "Tell me," he went on, turning to me, "what do you think of it all! What sort of a demon is driving him to Persia now? Queer, isn't it? I knew all along, of course, that he was the flighty sort of fellow you can't count on. It's a pity though that he should come to a bad end . . . but there's nothing for it, as you can see. I've always said that nothing good will come of those who forget old friends." At that he turned away to conceal his agitation and began pacing up and down the courtyard beside his carriage, pretending to examine the wheels, while the tears kept welling in his eyes.

"Maxim Maximych," said I, walking up to him. "What were the papers Pechorin left you?"

"The Lord knows! Some notes or other. . . ."

"What do you intend to do with them?"

"Eh? I'll have them made into cartridges."

"You'd better give them to me."

He looked at me in amazement, muttered something under his breath and began to rummage through his portmanteau. He took out one notebook and threw it contemptuously on the ground. The second, the third and the tenth all shared the fate of the first. There was something childish about the old man's resentment, and I was both amused and sorry for him.

"That's the lot," he said. "I congratulate you on your find."

"And I may do whatever I want with them?"

"Print them in the papers if you like, what do I care? Yes, indeed, am I a friend of his or a relative? True, we shared the same roof for a long time, but then I have lived with all sorts of people."

I seized the papers and carried them off before the captain could change his mind. Soon we were told that the *okazia* would set out in an hour, and I gave orders to harness the horses. The captain came into my room as I was putting on my hat. He showed no sign of preparing for the journey; there was a strained coldness about him.

"Aren't you coming, Maxim Maximych?"

"No."

"Why?"

"I haven't seen the commandant, and I have to deliver some government property to him."

"But didn't you go to see him?"

"Yes, of course," he stammered, "but he wasn't in and I didn't wait for him."

I understood what he meant. For the first time in his life, perhaps, the poor old man had neglected his duties for *his own convenience*, to put it in official language, and this had been his reward!

"I am very sorry, Maxim Maximych," I said, "very sorry-indeed, that we have to part so soon."

"How can we ignorant old fogies keep up with you haughty young men of the world; here, with Cherkess

bullets flying about, you put up with us somehow . . . but if we chanced to meet later on you would be ashamed to shake hands with the likes of us."

"I have not deserved this reproof, Maxim Maximych."

"I'm speaking in general, you know; at any rate, I wish you luck and a pleasant journey."

We parted rather coldly. Good Maxim Maximych was now an obstinate, cantankerous captain. And why? Because Pechorin through absent-mindedness or for some other reason had merely extended his hand when his old friend wanted to fall on his neck. It is sad to see a young man's finest hopes and dreams shattered, to see him lose the rosy illusions with which he viewed man's deeds and emotions, although there is still hope that he may exchange the old delusions for new ones no less transitory but also no less sweet. But what is there to exchange them for at Maxim Maximych's age? Without wishing it, the heart would harden and the soul wither....

I set out alone.

PECHORIN'S DIARY

FOREWORD

Recently I learned that Pechorin had died upon his return from Persia. This news pleased me very much, for it gave me the right to publish these notes, and I took advantage of the opportunity to sign my name to another man's work. God forbid that the reader should penalise me for such an innocent deception!

Now I must explain briefly what it was that spurred me to make public the innermost secrets of a man I never knew. It might have been understandable had I been his friend; for the perfidious indiscretion of the true friend is something everyone can appreciate. But I saw him only once for a fleeting moment, and hence cannot regard him with that inexplicable hatred which, concealed under the mask of friendship, only waits for

death or misfortune to overtake the object of affection in order to bring down upon his head a hailstorm of remonstrances, advice, mockery and commiseration.

Reading over these notes, I became convinced that the man must have been sincere in so mercilessly laying bare his own weaknesses and vices. The story of a human soul, even the pettiest of souls, is no less interesting and instructive than the story of a nation, especially if it is the result of the observation of a mature mind and written without the vain desire to evoke compassion or wonder. One of the defects of Rousseau's *Confessions* is that he read it to his friends.

Thus it was purely the desire to do some good that impelled me to publish excerpts from the diary I happened to acquire. Though I have changed all proper names, those mentioned in it will no doubt recognise themselves and perhaps find justification for deeds they have held against a man who is no longer of this world. For we nearly always forgive that which we understand.

I have included in this book only excerpts bearing on Pechorin's stay in the Caucasus. This still leaves me with a thick notebook in which he tells the story of his whole life. Some day it too will be submitted to public judgement; now, however, I dare not take the responsibility upon myself for many important reasons.

Some readers will probably want to know what I think of Pechorin's character. My reply may be found in the title of this book. "But that is bitter irony!" they will say. I do not know.

I

TAMAN

Taman is the most wretched of all seaboard towns in Russia. I very nearly died of hunger there, and was almost drowned into the bargain. I arrived by post chaise late at night. The coachman stopped his tired troika at

the gate of the only brick building, which stood at the entrance to the town. Roused from a doze by the tinkling of the carriage bell, the Black Sea Cossack on sentry duty shouted wildly: "Who goes there?" A Cossack sergeant and a local policeman emerged from the building. I explained that I was an officer on my way to a line unit on official business and demanded lodgings for the night. The policeman took us around town. All the cottages we stopped at were occupied. It was chilly, and not having slept for three nights running, I was exhausted and began to lose my temper. "Take me anywhere you want, you scoundrel! To the devil, if you please, as long as there's a place to stay!" I shouted. "There is still one place left," the policeman replied, scratching the back of his head. "Only you will not like it, sir; there are queer goings on there. . . ." Failing to grasp the precise meaning of the last remark, I told him to go ahead, and after wandering about for a long time in muddy alleys lined with rickety fences, we drove up to a small hut on the seashore.

A full moon lit up the reed roof and white walls of my prospective dwelling. In the courtyard, which was fenced in by a crude stone wall, stood another miserable, crooked hut, smaller and older than the first. A cliff dropped abruptly to the sea from the very walls of the hut, and down below the dark blue waves broke against the shore with an incessant roar. The moon looked down serenely upon the restless but obedient sea, and by its light I could discern two ships at anchor far from the shore, their black rigging a motionless cobweb against the paler background of the skyline. "There are ships in the anchorage," thought I. "Tomorrow I shall leave for Gelenjik."

A Cossack from a line unit served as my batman. Telling him to take down my portmanteau and dismiss the driver, I called for the master of the house. There was no answer. I knocked, and still there was no reply. What could it mean? Finally a boy of about fourteen appeared on the porch.

"Where is the master?" "No master." "What? You mean there is no master at all?" "None at all." "And the mistress?" "Gone to town." "Who's going to open the door for me?" said I, kicking at it. The door opened by itself, and a dank smell came from the hut. I struck a sulphur match and brought it close to the youngster's nose, and in its light I saw two white eyes. He was blind, totally blind from birth. As he stood motionless before me I looked closely into his face.

I admit that I am greatly prejudiced against all the blind, squint-eyed, deaf, dumb, legless, armless, hunch-backed and so on. I have observed that there is always some strange relationship between the external appearance of a man and his soul, as if with the loss of a limb the soul too lost some faculty of feeling.

So I examined the blind lad's face, but what would you have me read on a face without eyes? I looked at him long with involuntary pity when a faint smile flitted across his thin lips, making, I know not why, the most unpleasant impression on me. A suspicion that he was not as blind as he seemed flashed through my mind, and in vain I tried to assure myself that it is impossible to simulate a cataract. And why should anyone do that? But I couldn't help suspecting, for I am often inclined to form preconceived notions.

"Are you the master's son?" I asked him at last. "Nay." "Then who are you?" "Orphan, a poor orphan." "Has the mistress any children?" "Nay. There was a daughter but she ran away across the sea with a Tatar." "What kind of a Tatar?" "The devil knows! A Crimean Tatar, a boatman from Kerch."

I walked into the hut. Two benches, a table and a huge trunk next to the stove were the sole furnishings. Not a single icon was there on the wall—a bad sign that! The sea wind blew in through a broken window. I extracted the stub of a wax candle from my portmanteau and lighting it began to lay out my things. I put my sword and gun in a corner, laid my pistols on the table, and spread out my cloak on a bench while the Cossack

laid out his on the other. In ten minutes he was snoring, but I could not sleep; the lad with the white eyes kept swimming before me in the gloom.

About an hour passed in this way. The moon shone into the window and a beam of light played on the earthen floor of the hut. Suddenly a shadow darted across the bright strip on the floor. I got up and looked out of the window. Someone again ran past and disappeared, God knows where. It did not seem possible that the creature could have run down the cliff to the shore, yet he could not have gone anywhere else. I got up, put on my *besmet*, girded on a dagger and softly crept out of the hut. The blind boy was coming towards me. I drew close to the fence, and he went past with sure though cautious tread. He carried a bundle under his arm. Turning toward the boat landing, he began the descent along a narrow, steep path. "The blind receive their sight, and the deaf hear," I thought, following close enough not to lose sight of him.

In the meantime clouds began to envelop the moon and a fog rose at sea. The stern light of the ship nearest the shore was barely visible through it. On the shore gleamed the foam of the breakers, which threatened to submerge it any moment. Picking my way with difficulty down the steep incline, I saw the blind boy stop, then turn to the right and proceed so close to the water that it seemed the waves must surely seize him and carry him out to sea. It was obvious, however, that this was not the first time he was making the journey, judging by the confidence with which he stepped from stone to stone and avoided the holes. At last he stopped as if listening for something, then sat down on the ground with his bundle beside him. Hidden behind a projecting cliff I watched his movements. A few minutes later a figure in white appeared from the other side, walked up to the blind boy and sat down beside him. The wind carried fragments of their conversation to me.

"What do you say, blind one?" a woman's voice said. "The gale is too heavy; Yanko won't come."

"Yanko is not afraid of gales," the other replied.

"The fog is thickening," came the woman's voice again with a note of sadness.

"It will be easier to slip by the patrol ships in the fog," was the reply.

"What if he is drowned?"

"Well, what of it? You'll go to church on Sunday without a new ribbon."

A silence followed. I was struck, however, by one thing: the blind boy had spoken to me in the Ukrainian dialect, and now he was speaking pure Russian.

"You see, I am right," said the blind boy again, clapping his hands. "Yanko does not fear the sea, or the winds, or the fog, or yet the coast patrols. Listen, that's not the waves splashing, you can't fool me; those are his long oars."

The woman jumped up and peered anxiously into the distance.

"You're raving, blind one," she said. "I don't see anything."

I must admit that, strain as I did, I failed to discern anything like a boat in the distance. Some ten minutes had passed thus when a black speck now growing larger, now diminishing, appeared among the mountainous billows. Slowly climbing to the crests of the waves and sharply dropping into the troughs, the boat approached the shore. It was an intrepid oarsman who ventured on a night like this to cross the twenty versts of the strait, and the reason that spurred him on must have been pressing indeed. Thus thinking, my heart involuntarily quickening its beat, I watched the frail craft dive with the dexterity of a duck and then leap up from the watery chasm through the flying foam with a swift movement of the oars that recalled the thrust of wings. I thought it must surely crash full force against the shore and be dashed to pieces, but it neatly swung around and slipped safely into a tiny bay. A man of medium stature wearing a Tatar sheepskin cap stepped from the boat.

He motioned with his hand and all three commenced to haul something from the craft; the cargo was so great that to this day I cannot understand why the boat had not sunk. Each shouldering a bundle, they set out along the shore and I soon lost sight of them. I had to return to my lodgings. I must admit, however, that all these strange doings alarmed me, and I could hardly wait for the morning.

My Cossack was very much surprised when upon waking up he found me fully dressed, but I gave him no explanation. After admiring for some time the blue sky mottled with ragged little clouds and the Crimean coast which spread out in a line of mauve in the distance and ended in a crag topped by the white tower of a lighthouse, I set out for the Fanagoria fort to inquire at the commandant's when I could leave for Gelenjik.

But, alas, the commandant was unable to tell me anything definite. The vessels in the harbour were either coast guard ships or merchant boats which had not even begun loading. "Perhaps there will be a packet boat in three or four days," the commandant said, "and then we shall see." I returned to my lodgings morose and angry. My Cossack met me at the door with a scared look on his face.

"Looks bad, sir!" he said.

"Yes, my friend. The Lord knows when we shall get away!" Now he looked still more worried. Bending toward me, he whispered:

"It's uncanny here! Today I met a Cossack sergeant I know, we were in the same detachment last year. When I told him where we'd stopped he said to me: 'Brother, it's unclean there; the people are no good!' And, come to think of it, what sort of a fellow is this blind chap? Goes everywhere alone, to the market, for bread, and to fetch water. You can see they're used to that sort of thing here."

"What of it? Has the mistress of the house appeared at least?"

"While you were out an old woman came with her daughter."

"What daughter? She has no daughter."

"God knows who she is then. The old woman is in the hut now."

I went inside. The stove had been fired until it was hot and a dinner rather sumptuous for poor folk was cooking. To all my questions the old woman replied that she was deaf and could not hear me. What could I do? I addressed the blind boy, who was sitting in front of the stove feeding brushwood into the fire. "Now tell me, you blind imp," said I, taking hold of his ear, "where did you go last night with that bundle, eh?" He burst into tears and began howling and wailing: "Where'd I go? Nowhere. And I don't know of any bundle." This time the old woman heard what was going on and began to grumble: "Of all the things to imagine, and about the poor wretch, too! Why can't you leave him alone? What has he done to you?" This disgusted me and I walked out firmly resolved to find the key to the riddle.

I wrapped my cloak around me and sat down on a boulder beside the wall, gazing into the distance. Before me spread the sea agitated by last night's gale, and its monotonous roar like the murmuring of a city falling into slumber reminded me of bygone years, carrying my thoughts to the North, to our frigid capital. Stirred by memories I forgot all else. An hour and perhaps more passed thus. Suddenly something like a song caught my ear. It was a song, and the voice was pleasant, feminine, but where did it come from? I listened to it; it was a strange melody, now slow and plaintive, now fast and lively. I looked around, but saw no one; I listened again, and the sound seemed to drop from the heavens. I looked up, and on the roof of the hut I saw a girl in a striped dress, a real mermaid with loosened tresses. Shading her eyes from the sun with her hand, she was peering into the distance, now smiling and talking to herself, now picking up the song again.

I memorised the song word for word:

*Over boundless billows green,
Over billows surging,
Fly the ships with sails a-spread,
Onward urging.
There among those ships at sea,
Sails my shallop sprightly,
Curtsying to wind and wave,
Kissed by combers lightly.
Stormy winds begin to blow,
Stately ships a-rocking,
Widely do they spread their wings—
To leeward flocking.
The angry ocean then I pray,
Bending low before him:
“Spare my barque, O fearsome one!”—
Thus do I implore him.—
“Precious goods are stowed on board!—
Fierce the sea is foaming!—
Keep her safe—a madcap steers
Through the gloaming!”*

It occurred to me that I had heard the same voice the night before. For a moment I was lost in thought, and when I looked up at the roof again, the girl was no longer there. Suddenly she tripped past me, singing a different tune; snapping her fingers, she ran in to the old woman, and I heard their voices rise in argument. The old woman grew very angry but the girl merely laughed aloud. A short while later my mermaid came skipping along again. As she approached me she paused and looked me straight in the eyes, as if surprised at finding me there. Then she turned away carelessly and went quietly down to the boat landing. This, however, was not the end of it: all day long she hovered around my quarters, singing and skipping about without a moment's respite. She was a strange creature indeed. There was nothing foolish about her expression; on the contrary, her eyes inspected me with keen penetration, they

seemed to be endowed with some magnetic power, and each glance appeared to invite a question, but as soon as I opened my mouth to speak she ran away, smiling artfully.

Never had I seen a woman like her. She was far from beautiful, though I have my preconceived notions as regards beauty as well. There was much of the thoroughbred in her, and in women as in horses that is a great thing; this discovery belongs to young France. It (I mean pedigree, not young France) is betrayed mainly by the walk and by the hands and feet, and particularly indicative is the nose. In Russia a classic nose is rarer than small feet. My songstress looked no more than eighteen. Her extraordinarily graceful figure, the peculiar way she had of tilting her head, her long auburn hair, the golden sheen of her slightly sun-tanned neck and shoulders, and especially her finely chiselled nose enchanted me. Though I could read something wild and suspicious in her sidelong glances and though there was something indefinable in her smile, the preconceived notions got the better of me. The chiselled nose carried me off my feet, and I fancied I had found Goethe's *Mignon*, that queer figment of his German imagination. And indeed, there was much in common between the two, the same swift transitions from supreme agitation to utter immobility, the same puzzling conversation, the same gambolling and the same strange songs. . . .

Toward evening I stopped her in the doorway and engaged her in the following conversation:

"Tell me, my pretty one," I asked, "what were you doing on the roof today?" "Looking where the wind blows from." "Why?" "Whence the wind blows, thence happiness." "Indeed, were you invoking happiness by song?" "Where there is song there is also good fortune." "Supposing you sing grief for yourself?" "What of it? If things will not be better, they'll be worse, and then it's not so far from bad to good." "Who taught you that song?" "No one taught it to me. I sing whatever comes to my mind; he to whom I sing will hear; others will

not understand." "What is your name, my nightingale?" "Whoever named me knows." "And who named you?" "How should I know?" "You are sly! But I've learned something about you." There was no change in her expression, not even a trembling of her lips, as if it all were no concern of hers. "I know that you went down to the shore last night." Assuming an air of importance I told her everything I had seen, hoping to disconcert her, but in vain! She only burst out laughing. "You saw a lot but know little; and what you do know you'd best keep under lock and key." "Supposing I took it into my head to report to the commandant?" I adopted a very serious, even severe mien. Suddenly she bounded off and began singing, disappearing like a bird frightened into flight. My last remark was entirely out of place, though at the time I did not suspect its full purport and only later had occasion to regret ever having made it.

It was already dark and I told the Cossack to put on the kettle, lighted a candle and sat at the table smoking my travelling pipe. I was already finishing my second glass of tea when the door suddenly creaked and I heard the soft rustle of a dress and light footsteps behind me. I started and turned around: it was she, my undine! She sat down opposite me without a word and looked at me with eyes that for some unfathomable reason seemed full of sweet tenderness; they reminded me of eyes that years before had so despotically ruled my life. She seemed to wait for me to speak, but I was too confused to say a word. The deathly pallor of her face betrayed the tumult within her; her hand aimlessly wandered over the table and I noticed that it trembled; now her bosom rose high, now she seemed to be holding her breath. The comedy began to pall and I was ready to cut it short in the most prosaic fashion by offering her a glass of tea when she jumped up, entwined her arms around my neck and planted a moist, fiery kiss on my lips. Everything went dark before my eyes, my head swam, and I embraced her with all my youthful passion, but she slipped like a serpent from my arms, whis-

pering in my ear: "Meet me on the shore tonight after everyone is asleep", and ran out of the room as swift as an arrow. In the passageway she upset the teakettle and the candle standing on the floor. "She-devil!" shouted the Cossack, who had made himself comfortable on some straw and was intending to warm himself with the tea I had left. I came to myself with a start.

Some two hours later when all was quiet I roused my Cossack. "If you hear a pistol shot," I told him, "run down to the waterfront." He opened his eyes wide but replied mechanically: "Yes, sir." I stuck a pistol under my belt and went out. She was waiting for me at the top of the slope, more than flimsily clad, a small shawl tied around her slender form.

"Follow me," she said, taking me by the hand, and we started down the incline. I do not know how I managed not to break my neck. At the bottom we turned to the right and took the path along which I had followed the blind boy the night before. The moon had not risen yet, and only two stars like two distant light-houses shone in the dark blue sky. The swell came in at even, regular intervals, barely lifting the lone boat moored to the shore. "Let's get into the boat," said my companion. I hesitated, for I have no predilection for sentimental sea jaunts, but this was not the time to retreat. She jumped into the boat and I followed, and before I knew it we had cast off. "What does this mean?" I asked, angrily now. "It means," she said as she pushed me on to a seat and wrapped her arms around me, "that I love you." She pressed her cheek against mine and I felt her breath hot on my face. Suddenly something splashed into the water; I reached for my belt, but the pistol was gone. Now a terrible suspicion crept into my heart and the blood rushed to my head. Looking around I saw we were already some fifty sagues from the shore, and I unable to swim! I wanted to push her away, but she clung to my clothes like a cat, then gave me a sharp push that nearly threw me overboard. The boat rocked dangerously, but I regained my balance, and a desperate

struggle began between us. Fury gave me strength, but I soon noticed that my adversary was more agile than I. "What do you want?" I shouted, gripping her small hands. I could hear her fingers crack, but she did not cry out; her snakelike nature was superior to the pain.

"You saw us," she replied, "and you will report on us." With a superhuman effort she forced me against the gunwale until we both hung perilously over the water and her hair dipped into it. The moment was decisive. I braced my knee against the side of the boat and seized her by the hair with one hand and the throat with the other. She let go of my clothes and in a flash I had hurled her into the sea.

It was already quite dark and after seeing her head bob up a couple of times in the foam I lost sight of her completely.

I found a piece of an old oar at the bottom of the boat, and after a great deal of effort managed to get to the landing. As I was making my way along the shore back to the hut, my eyes turned toward the spot where the blind boy had waited for the nocturnal boatman the night before. The moon was coming up and in its light I thought I saw a white-garbed figure sitting on the shore. Spurred on by curiosity I crept toward it and lay down in the grass on top of a bluff rising from the shore; by raising my head slightly I could observe everything that happened below, and I was neither too surprised nor sorry to find my mermaid there. She was wringing the sea water from her hair, and I noticed how her wet clothes outlined her lithe form and high bosom. Soon a boat appeared in the distance and quickly approached the shore. Like the night before, a man stepped out of it wearing a Tatar cap, though his hair was cropped in Cossack fashion, and he had a large knife stuck under his belt. "Yanko," she said, "everything is lost!" They continued talking, but in so low a voice that I could not hear a word. "And where is the blind one?" Yanko finally asked in a louder tone. "I sent him off," was the reply. A few minutes later the

blind boy appeared carrying a bag on his back. This was put into the boat.

"Listen, blind one," said Yanko; "take care of that spot, you know what I mean? There's a wealth of goods there.... And tell (the name I could not make out) that I am no longer his servant. Things have turned out badly and he'll see me no more. It's dangerous to go on. I'm going to look for work elsewhere; he won't find another daredevil like me. And tell him that had he paid more generously Yanko wouldn't have left him. I can always make my way wherever the wind blows and the sea roars!" After a brief pause, Yanko continued: "I'll take her with me, for she can't stay behind, and tell the old woman it's time she died; she's lived long enough and ought to know when her time's up. She'll never see us again."

"What about me?" the blind boy whimpered.

"What do I need you for?" was the answer.

In the meantime my undine had jumped into the boat and was waving to her comrade. Yanko put something into the blind boy's hand and muttered: "Here, buy yourself some ginger cakes." "Is that all?" asked the blind one. "All right, take this too." The coin rang as it fell on the stones. The blind boy did not pick it up. Yanko got into the boat, and as the wind was blowing out to sea, they raised a small sail and quickly slipped into the distance. For a long time the white sail was visible among the dark waves in the moonlight. The blind boy remained sitting on the shore, and I heard something that sounded like sobbing: it was the blind boy weeping, and he wept for a long, long time.... A sadness came over me. Why did fate have to throw me into the peaceful lives of *honest smugglers*? Like a stone hurled into the placid surface of a well I had disturbed their tranquillity, and like a stone had nearly gone to the bottom myself!

I returned to my quarters. In the passage a candle spluttered its last on a wooden platter, while my Cossack, orders notwithstanding, was fast asleep gripping a

gun with both hands. I did not disturb him, and picking up the candle went into the room. But alas, my box, silverinlaid sabre and a Daghestan dagger which I had received as a present from a friend had vanished. Now I guessed what the confounded blind boy had carried. Rousing the Cossack with scant ceremony, I swore at him, but there was nothing that could be done about it any more. And would it not have been ludicrous for me to complain to my superiors that I had been robbed by a blind boy and that an eighteen-year-old girl had all but drowned me?

Thank God an opportunity offered itself the following morning to travel farther, and I left Taman. What happened later to the old woman and the poor blind boy, I do not know. And, after all, what have human joys and sorrows to do with me, an itinerant officer, and one travelling on official business to boot!

END OF PART ONE

PART II

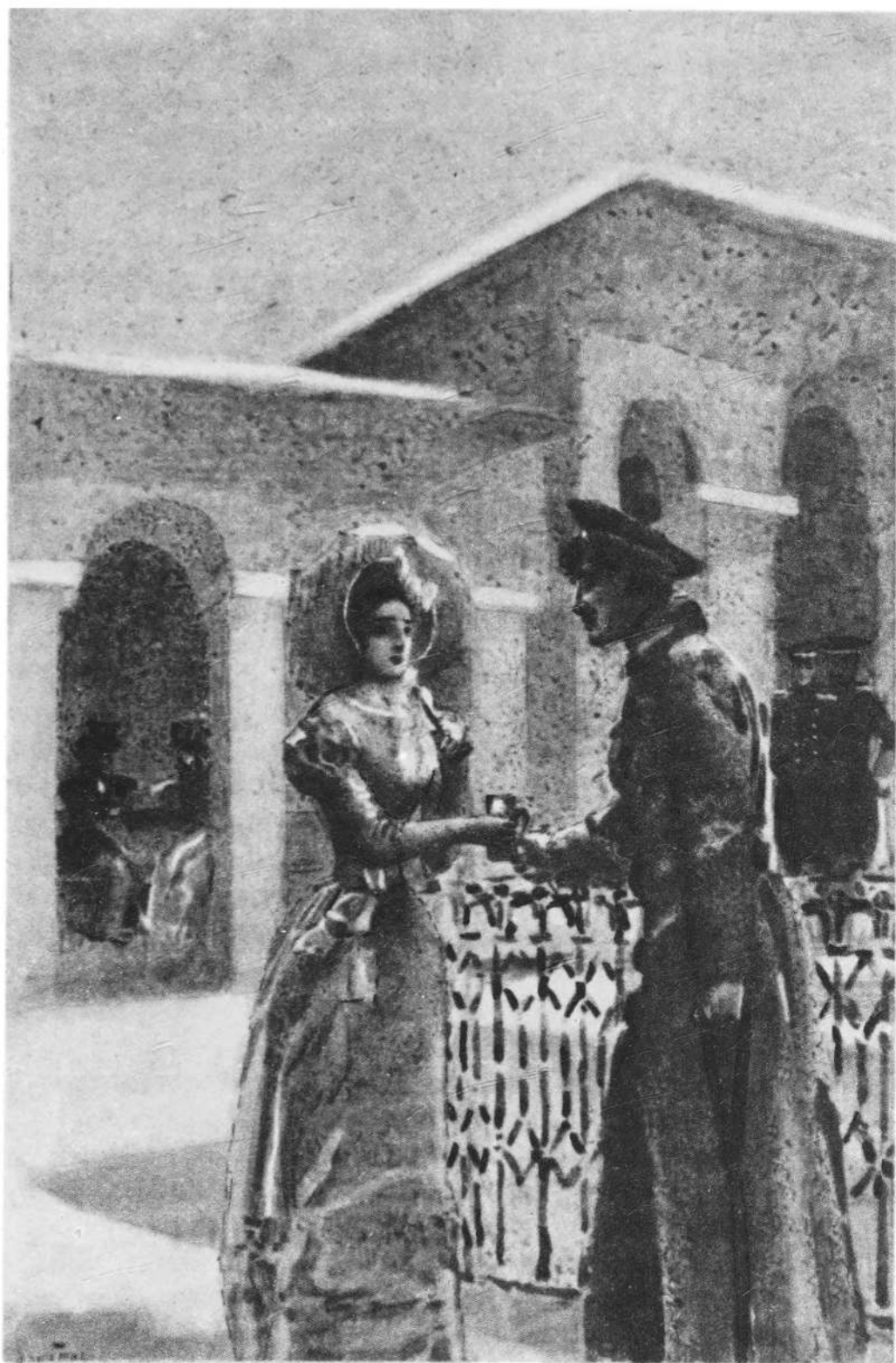
Conclusion of Pechorin's Diary

II

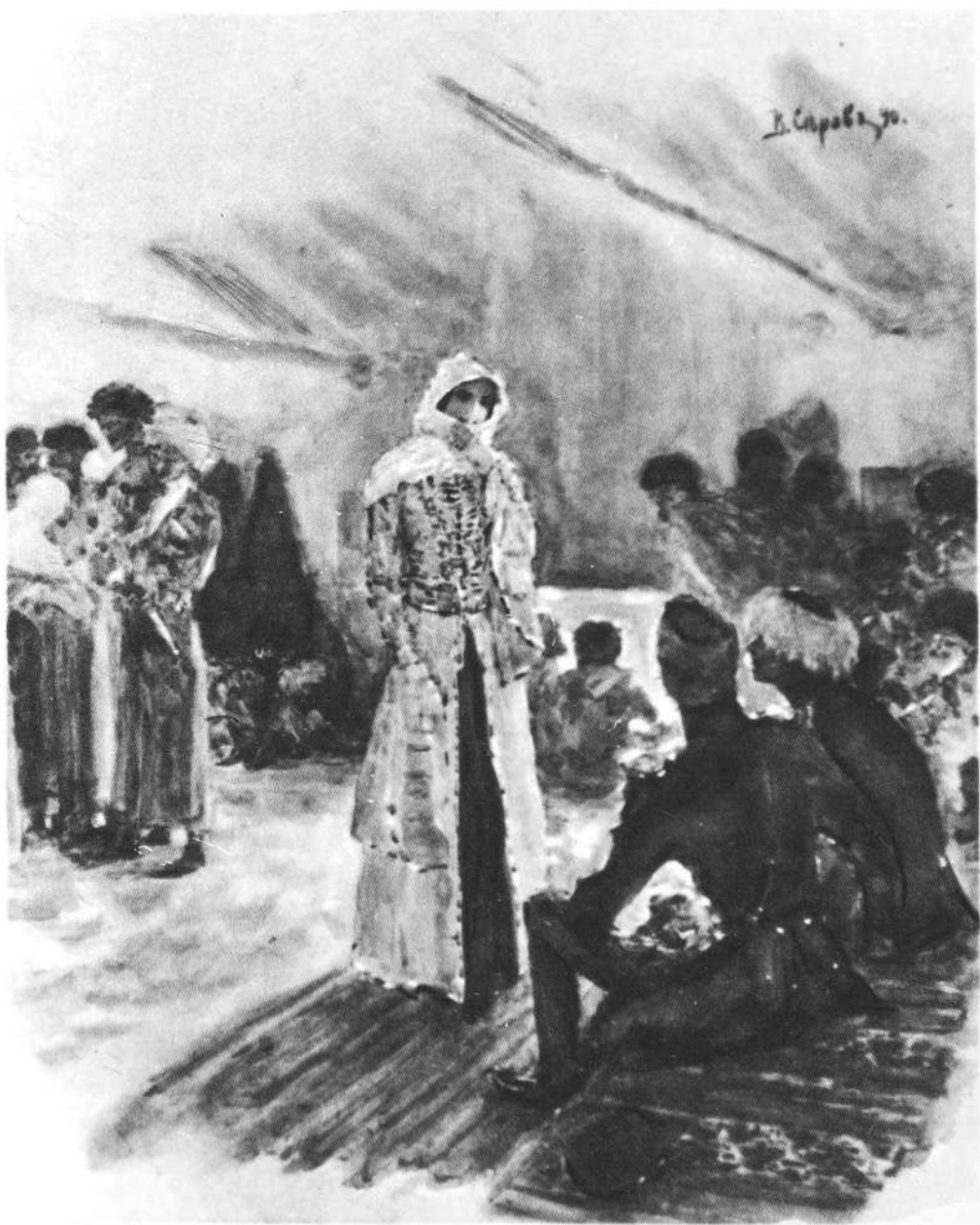
PRINCESS MARY

May 11

Yesterday I arrived in Pyatigorsk and rented quarters in the outskirts at the foot of Mashuk; this is the highest part of the town, so high that the clouds will reach down to my roof during thunderstorms. When I opened the window at five o'clock this morning the fragrance of the flowers growing in the modest little front garden flooded my room. The flower-laden branches of the cherry trees peep into my windows, and now and then the wind strews my writing desk with the white petals. I have a marvellous view on three sides. Five-peaked Beshtau looms blue in the west like "the last cloud of a dispersed storm"; in the north rises Mashuk like a shaggy Persian



"Princess Mary". Mary and Grushnitsky. Painting by Mikhail Vrubel.



"Bella". Painted by Valentin Serov.

cap concealing this part of the horizon. To the east the view is gayer: down below the clean new town spreads colourfully before me, the medicinal fountains babble, and so do the multilingual crowds, farther in the distance the massive amphitheatre of mountains grows ever bluer and mistier, while on the fringe of the horizon stretches the silvery chain of snow-capped peaks beginning with Kazbek and ending with twin-peaked Elbrus.... It is a joy to live in a country like this! A feeling of elation flows in all my veins. The air is pure and fresh like the kiss of a child, the sun is bright and the sky blue—what more could one desire? What place is there left for passions, yearnings and regrets? But it's time to go. I shall walk down to Elizabeth Spring where they say the spa society congregates in the mornings.

.
Upon reaching the centre of the town I took the boulevard where I encountered several melancholy groups slowly climbing the hill. That most of them were landed families from the plains was obvious from the much-worn, old-fashioned coats of the men and the dainty dress of the wives and daughters. They evidently had all the eligible young men at the watering place marked out for they looked at me with fond curiosity. The Petersburg cut of my coat deceived them at first, but discovering my army epaulettes they soon turned away in disgust.

The wives of the local officials, the hostesses of the springs, so to say, were more graciously inclined. They carry lorgnettes and pay less attention to the uniform, for in the Caucasus they have learned to find ardent hearts under brass buttons and enlightened minds under white forage caps. These ladies are very charming, and remain charming for a long time! Their admirers are renewed every year, which perhaps explains the secret of their indefatigable amiability. As I climbed up the narrow path leading to Elizabeth Spring I passed a crowd of men, both civilians and military, who, as I discovered later, form a class in itself among those who

keep vigil at the fount. They drink, but not water, go out but little, philander in a desultory way; they gamble and complain of boredom. They are fops; they assume academic poses as they dip their wickered tumblers into the sulphurous water; the civilians flaunt pale-blue cravats, and the armymen, ruffs showing above their collars. They affect deep disdain for provincial society and sigh at the thought of aristocratic drawing rooms of the capital which are closed to them.

Here at last is the well. . . . On a site nearby, a little red-roofed building has been raised over the baths, and farther on, a gallery to shelter the promenaders when it rains. Several wounded officers—pale, sad-looking men—sat on a bench holding their crutches in front of them. Several ladies were briskly pacing back and forth, waiting for the water to take effect. Among them were two or three pretty faces. Through the avenues of vines that cover the slope of Mashuk I caught occasional glimpses of gay bonnets that evidently belonged to seekers of solitude for two since each bonnet was invariably accompanied by an army cap or an ugly round hat. On a steep cliff where there is a pavilion named the Aeolian Harp, sight-seers were aiming a telescope at Elbrus; among them were two tutors with their charges who had come here in search of a cure for king's evil.

Panting, I had stopped at the brink of the precipice and was leaning against a corner of the building surveying the picturesque scene when I suddenly heard a familiar voice behind me:

"Pechorin! Been here long?"

I turned around and saw Grushnitsky. We embraced. I had met him in a line unit. He had a bullet wound in the leg and had left for the watering place a week earlier than I.

Grushnitsky is a cadet. He has served only a year and wears a heavy soldier's greatcoat which he flaunts as his particular brand of foppery. He has a soldier's Cross of St. George. He is well-built, swarthy and dark-haired, and looks twenty-five though he can scarcely be more

than twenty-one. He has a way of throwing his head back when talking, and he constantly twirls his moustache with his left hand for with his right he leans on his crutch. His speech is glib and florid; he is one of those who have a pompous phrase ready for every occasion, who are unmoved by simple beauty and who grandly assume a garb of extraordinary emotions, exalted passions and exquisite anguish. They delight in creating an impression, and romantic provincial ladies are infatuated with them to the point of distraction. In their old age they become either peaceable landlords or drunkards, sometimes both. They are often endowed with many good qualities, but they have not a particle of poetry in their souls. Grushnitsky used to have a passion for declaiming; he would shower you with words as soon as the conversation transcended the bounds of everyday matters, and I could never argue with him. He neither answers your rebuttal nor listens to what you have to say. As soon as you stop, he launches upon a long tirade which on the face of it seems to have some bearing on what you have said, but actually amounts only to a continuation of his own argument.

He is rather witty and his epigrams are frequently amusing but never pointed or malicious; he does not annihilate a person with one word. He knows neither people nor their foibles, for all his life he has been preoccupied with himself alone. His object in life is to become the hero of a romance. So often has he tried to make others believe he is a creature never intended for this world and hence doomed to some kind of occult suffering that he has practically convinced himself of it. That is why he vaunts his heavy soldier's greatcoat. I see through him and he dislikes me for it, though on the face of it we are on the friendliest of terms. Grushnitsky has a reputation for superb courage; I have seen him in action: he brandishes his sabre, and dashes forward shouting with his eyes shut. There is something very un-Russian in that brand of gallantry!

I do not like him either, and I feel we are bound to

fall foul of each other one day with rueful consequences for one of us.

His coming to the Caucasus too was the result of his romantic fanaticism. I am certain that on the eve of his departure from his father's village he tragically announced to some comely neighbour that he was not going merely to serve in the army, but to seek death, because . . . at this point he probably covered his eyes with his hand and went on like this: "No, you must not know the reason! Your pure soul would shudder at the thought! And why should you? What am I to you? Can you understand me?" and so on and so forth.

He told me himself that the reason why he enlisted in the K. regiment will forever remain a secret between him and his Maker.

And yet when he discards his tragic guise Grushnitsky can be quite pleasant and amusing. I would like to see him in the company of women, for I imagine that is when he would try to be at his best.

We greeted each other as old friends. I began to ply him with questions concerning life at the spa and the interesting people there were to be met.

"We lead a rather prosaic life," he sighed. "Those who drink the waters in the mornings are listless like all sick people, and those who drink wine in the evenings are unbearable like all people who enjoy good health. There is feminine company, but it offers little consolation; they play whist, dress badly and speak terrible French. This year Princess Ligovskaya with her daughter are the only visitors from Moscow, but I have not met them. My greatcoat is like a brand of ostracism. The sympathy it evokes is as unwelcome as charity."

Just then two ladies walked past us toward the spring, one middle-aged, the other young and slender. I could not see their faces for the bonnets, but they were dressed in strict conformity with the very best taste: everything was as it should be. The young woman wore a high-necked pearl-grey dress; a dainty silk kerchief encircled her supple neck. A pair of dark-brown shoes encased her

slender little feet up to the ankles so daintily that even one uninitiated into the mysteries of beauty would have caught his breath, if only in amazement. Her light but dignified gait had something virginal about it that eluded definition yet was tangible enough to the eye. As she walked past us, that subtle fragrance was wafted from her which sometimes is exhaled by a note from a charming woman.

"That is Princess Ligovskaya," said Grushnitsky, "and her daughter, whom she calls Mary in the English manner. They've been here only three days."

"You seem to know her name already."

"Heard it quite by accident," he replied, colouring. "I must confess I have no desire to meet them. These haughty aristocrats look upon us armymen as savages. What is it to them if there is an intellect under a numbered cap and a heart beneath a thick greatcoat?"

"Poor greatcoat," said I, smiling. "And who is the gentleman going up to them and so obligingly offering them a tumbler?"

"Oh, that's the Moscow dandy Rayevich! He's a gambler, as you can see by the heavy gold chain across his blue waistcoat. And look at that thick cane—just like Robinson Crusoe's! Or the beard he sports, and the haircut *à la moujik*."

"You seem to bear a grudge against the whole human race."

"And with good reason. . . ."

"Really?"

By this time the ladies had left the well and were again passing us. Grushnitsky hastened to strike a dramatic pose with the help of his crutch and replied loudly in French:

"Mon cher, je hais les hommes pour ne pas les mépriser, car autrement la vie serait une farce trop dégoûtante."

The attractive Princess turned and bestowed on the speaker a long and searching glance. It was an obscure kind of look, but without a trace of mockery, on which

I mentally congratulated him from the bottom of my heart.

"This Princess Mary is most charming," I said to him. "Her eyes are like velvet, yes, velvet. I would advise you to adopt this expression when you talk about her eyes; the eyelashes, both upper and lower, are so long that the sunbeams find no reflection in her pupils. I love eyes like that—without a shine in them, and so soft that they seem to be caressing you. . . . By the way, I think they are the only good point in her face. . . . And are her teeth white? That is very important! It's a pity she did not smile at your grandiloquence."

"You talk about a charming woman as if she were an English thoroughbred," said Grushnitsky indignantly.

"*Mon cher*," I replied, trying to fall into tone, "*je méprise les femmes pour ne pas les aimer, car autrement la vie serait un mélodrame trop ridicule.*"

I turned and walked off. For half an hour I strolled along the vine-clad walks, along the limestone cliffs and among the low bushes between them, until it grew hot and I hurried home. As I passed by the sulphur spring I stopped to rest in the shade of the covered gallery and thus became a witness of a rather curious spectacle. This is how the actors were placed. The elder Princess was sitting with the Moscow fop on a bench in the gallery and seemed to be engaged in a serious conversation. The young Princess, having apparently drunk her last glassful of water, was pacing thoughtfully up and down by the well. Grushnitsky was standing at the well. There was no one else around.

I went up closer and hid behind a corner of the gallery. Just then Grushnitsky dropped his tumbler on the sand and tried to stoop to pick it up, but his wounded leg made it hard for him. Poor chap! How he tried, leaning against the crutch, but in vain. His expressive face actually registered pain.

Princess Mary saw this better than I did.

Quicker than a bird she was at his side, bent down, picked up the tumbler and handed it to him with an

inexpressibly sweet gesture; then she blushed furiously, cast a glance in the direction of the gallery, but seeing that her mother had not noticed anything, immediately regained her composure. When Grushnitsky opened his mouth to thank her she was already far away. A minute later she left the gallery in the company of her mother and the dandy, but as she passed Grushnitsky she assumed a most prim and proper air, not even turning her head in his direction or noticing the fervent gaze with which he escorted her until she disappeared behind the lime trees of the boulevard at the foot of the hill.... He caught a last glimpse of her bonnet on the other side of the street as she hurried into the gateway of one of the finest houses in Pyatigorsk. Behind her walked her mother, who bid farewell to Rayevich at the gate.

Only now did the poor smitten cadet become aware of my presence.

"Did you see it?" he asked, gripping my hand firmly. "She's simply an angel!"

"Why?" asked I feigning utter innocence.

"Didn't you see?"

"Of course I saw how she picked up your tumbler. If there had been a park-keeper around he would have done the same, only quicker in hopes of getting a tip. Though there is nothing surprising that she took pity on you; you made such an awful face when you stepped on your wounded leg...."

"Weren't you moved at all that moment you saw her soul shining in her eyes?"

"No."

I was lying, but I wanted to rouse him. I have an inborn urge to contradict; my whole life has been a mere chain of sad and futile opposition to the dictates of either heart or reason. The presence of an enthusiast makes me as cold as a midwinter's day, and I believe frequent association with a listless phlegmatic would make me an impassioned dreamer. I must also admit that at that moment an unpleasant but familiar sensation

lightly crept over my heart; that sensation was envy. I say "envy" frankly, because I am accustomed to being honest with myself. And it is unlikely that any young man (a man of the world accustomed to indulging his vanities, of course), who, having met a woman who attracted his idle fancy, would not be unpleasantly impressed upon seeing her favour another man no less a stranger than he.

Grushnitsky and I descended the hill in silence and walked down the boulevard past the windows of the house which our beauty had entered. She was sitting at the window. Tugging at my sleeve, Grushnitsky gave her one of those mistily tender looks that evoke so little response in women. I directed my lorgnette at her and saw that Grushnitsky's glance brought a smile to her face while my impertinent lorgnette made her very angry. Indeed, how dare a Caucasian armyman level an eye-glass at a princess from Moscow?

May 13

The doctor dropped in to see me this morning. His name is Werner, but he is a Russian. There is nothing surprising in that. I once knew an Ivanov who was a German.

Werner is in many respects a remarkable man. He is a sceptic and a materialist like most medical men, but he is also a poet, and that quite in earnest—a poet in all his deeds and frequently in words, though he never wrote two verses in his life. He has studied the vital chords of the human heart the way men study the sinews of a corpse, but he has never been able to make use of his knowledge just as a splendid anatomist may not be able to cure a fever. As a rule, Werner secretly laughed at his patients, yet once I saw him weep over a dying soldier. He was poor and dreamed of possessing millions, but he would not have gone a step out of his way for the sake of money. Once he told me that he would rather do an enemy a good turn than a friend, because in the

latter case it would amount to profiting by one's charity, whereas hatred grows in proportion to the generosity of the adversary. He had a malicious tongue, and branded by his epigrams, more than one good soul came to be regarded as a vulgar fool. His competitors, envious practitioners at the spa, spread a rumour that he drew caricatures of his patients; the latter were furious and he lost practically all his clientele. His friends, that is, all the really decent people serving in the Caucasus, tried in vain to repair his fallen prestige.

His appearance was of the kind that strikes one disagreeably at first sight but subsequently becomes likeable when the eye has learned to discern in the irregular features the imprint of suffering and nobility. There have been cases when women have fallen madly in love with men like him and would not have exchanged their ugliness for the beauty of the freshest and pinkest of Endymions. Women must be given credit for possessing an instinct for spiritual beauty; perhaps that is why men like Werner love women so passionately.

Werner was short of stature, thin and as frail as a child. Like Byron, he had one leg shorter than the other; his head was disproportionately large; he wore his hair cropped close, and the irregularities of his skull thus exposed would have astounded a phrenologist by their queer combination of contradictory inclinations. His small, black, ever restless eyes probed your thoughts. He dressed immaculately and with good taste, and his lean, small, sinewy hands were neatly gloved in pale yellow. His coat, cravat and waistcoat were invariably black. The young set called him Mephistopheles, and though he pretended to be displeased by the appellation, in reality it flattered his vanity. We soon understood each other and became companions—for I am incapable of friendship. Between two friends one is always the slave of the other, though frequently neither will admit it; the slave I cannot be, and to dominate is an arduous task since one must employ deception as well; besides, I have the servants and the money! This is how we became

acquainted: I met Werner in S., in a large and boisterous gathering of the young set. Toward the end of the evening the conversation took a philosophical and metaphysical turn. We spoke about convictions, of which each had his own.

"As for me, I am convinced of only one thing. . .," said the doctor.

"And what is that?" I asked, wishing to hear the opinion of a man who had been silent till then.

"That some fine morning sooner or later I shall die," he replied.

"I am better off than you," said I. "I have another conviction besides, which is that one exceedingly foul night I had the misfortune to be born."

Everyone else was of the opinion that we were talking nonsense, but really nobody had anything more clever to say. From that moment we singled each other out from among the crowd. We used to meet frequently and discuss abstract matters in all seriousness until we both noticed that we were pulling each other's leg. Then, after looking each other in the eye significantly—the way Cicero tells us the Roman augurs did—we would burst out laughing and separately satisfied with an evening well spent.

I was lying on a divan, my eyes fixed upon the ceiling and my hands behind my head, when Werner walked into my room. He seated himself in a chair, stood his cane in a corner, yawned and observed that it was getting hot outdoors. I replied that the flies were bothering me, and we both fell silent.

"You will have noticed, my dear doctor," said I, "that without fools the world would be very boring. . . . Now here we are, two intelligent people; we know in advance that everything can be argued about endlessly, and hence do not argue; we know nearly all of each other's innermost thoughts; a single word tells us a whole story, and we see the kernel of each of our sentiments through a triple husk. Sad things strike us as funny, funny things as sad, and generally speaking, if you want to know, we

are rather indifferent to everything except ourselves. Hence there can be no exchange of emotions and ideas between us; we know all we want to know about each other and do not wish to know more. That leaves only one thing to talk about: the latest news. Haven't you any news to tell me?"

Fatigued by the long speech, I closed my eyes and yawned.

"There is one idea in the balderdash you are talking," he replied after a pause for thought.

"Two!" I replied.

"Tell me one of them and I will say what the other is."

"Good. You begin," said I, continuing to inspect the ceiling and smiling inwardly.

"You would like to know some details about someone who has arrived at the spa, and I can guess who it is you have in mind because that person has already been inquiring about you."

"Doctor! We definitely need not converse; we can read each other's minds."

"Now the other one. . . ."

"The second idea is this: I would like to induce you to tell me something; firstly, because listening is less tiring than talking, secondly, because in listening one does not give anything away, thirdly, because you may learn another man's secret, and, fourthly, because clever people like you prefer a listener to a talker. Now let's come to the point: what did Princess Ligovskaya have to say to you about me?"

"Are you sure it was not Princess Mary?"

"Quite certain."

"Why?"

"Because Princess Mary asked about Grushnitsky."

"You have rare sagacity. The young Princess said she was certain the young man in the ordinary soldier's great-coat had been degraded to the ranks on account of a duel. . . ."

"I hope you did not disabuse her of that pleasant illusion. . . ."

"Naturally not."

"The plot thickens," I cried in elation, "and we shall see to the denouement of the comedy. Fate apparently does not wish me to be bored."

"I have a notion that poor Grushnitsky will end up as your victim," said the doctor.

"And then what happened, doctor?"

"Princess Ligovskaya said your face was familiar. I observed she must have met you somewhere in St. Petersburg society, and mentioned your name. She knew about you. It seems that your story made a sensation there. Then the Princess went on to recount your adventures, probably spicing the society gossip with her own opinions. Her daughter listened with interest, visualising you as the hero of a novel written in the modern style. I did not contradict the Princess though I knew she was talking nonsense."

"Worthy friend!" said I, extending my hand to him. The doctor gripped it with feeling and continued.

"If you wish me to, I'll introduce you. . . ."

"My dear fellow!" said I, spreading my hands. "Have you ever heard of heroes being formally presented? They make the acquaintance of their beloved by rescuing her from certain death. . . ."

"Do you really intend to court the Princess?"

"Not at all, quite the contrary! Doctor, I score at last, for you do not understand me! Yet it is rather annoying just the same," I continued after a moment's silence. "I make it a rule never to disclose my own thoughts, and am very glad when others divine them because that leaves me a loop-hole for denying them when necessary. But you must describe mama and daughter to me. What sort of people are they?"

"In the first place, Princess Ligovskaya is a woman of forty-five," replied Werner. "She has a splendid digestion, though her blood is not quite in order; you can tell by the red spots on her cheeks. The latter half of her life she has spent in Moscow where inactivity has caused her to put on weight. She is fond of spicy anecdotes and

says improper things when her daughter is out of the room. She told me that her daughter was as innocent as a dove. Though what it had to do with me, I don't know. I wanted to tell her that she might rest assured I would tell no one about it! The Princess is taking the cure for rheumatism, and the daughter the Lord knows what for; I told them both to drink two glasses of sulphur water daily and bathe twice weekly in it. The Princess apparently is unaccustomed to ordering people about, and she respects the brains and knowledge of her daughter, who has read Byron in English and knows algebra, for it seems that the young ladies of Moscow have taken up learning—good for them, I should say. In general our men are so ill-mannered that intelligent women probably find it unbearable to flirt with them. The elder Princess is very fond of young men, but Princess Mary regards them with a certain contempt—an old Moscow habit. In Moscow they go in for forty-year-old wits only.”

“Were you ever in Moscow, doctor?”

“Yes, I was. Had a sort of practice there.”

“Please go on.”

“I believe I have said everything there is to say.... Oh yes, one more thing: Princess Mary appears to be fond of discussing sentiments, emotions and the like. She spent a winter in Petersburg, but the city, and particularly its society, did not please her. Evidently she was given a cool reception.”

“You didn't meet anybody else at their place today, did you?”

“Yes, I did. There was an adjutant, a starched guardsman, and a lady, one of the new arrivals, some relative of the Princess' husband, a very pretty woman but a very sick one, I believe. You didn't happen to see her at the spring? She is of medium height, blonde, with regular features, a consumptive complexion, and a little dark mole on her right cheek. I was struck by the expressiveness of her face.”

“A mole?” I muttered. “Is it possible?”

The doctor looked at me and, laying his hand on my

heart, said solemnly: "You know her." My heart indeed was beating faster than usual.

"It's your turn to exult now," said I. "Only I trust that you will not give me away. I have not seen her yet, but I believe I recognise in the portrait you have painted a woman I loved in the old days. . . . Don't tell her a word about me, and if she asks you, speak ill of me."

"As you wish," said Werner, shrugging his shoulders.

When he left, a terrible sadness flooded my soul. Was it fate that brought us together in the Caucasus, or had she come on purpose, knowing she would find me here? What would the meeting be like? And was it she, after all? My presentiments had never deceived me. There is not another person on earth over whom the past holds such sway as over me. Every remembrance of a past sorrow or joy sends a pang through my heart and invariably strikes the very same chords. I am stupidly constituted, for I forget nothing—nothing!

After dinner I went down to the boulevard at about six and found a crowd there. The Princess and her daughter were seated on a bench surrounded by a flock of young men who were paying them constant attention. I found myself another bench some distance away, stopped two officers I knew and began telling them a story. Apparently it amused them, because they roared with laughter like madmen. Curiosity drew to my bench some of the gallants who had clustered around the Princess; then little by little the rest too deserted her and joined my group. I talked incessantly, telling anecdotes that were witty to the point of stupidity and ridiculing the queer characters that passed by with a malice bordering on viciousness. . . . Thus I continued to amuse my audience until sunset. Several times the young Princess strolled arm-in-arm with her mother past me, accompanied by a limping old man, and several times her gaze rested on me, expressing vexation while trying to convey indifference.

"What was he telling you?" she asked one of the young men who returned to her out of sheer politeness.

"It must have been a very thrilling story—about his battle exploits no doubt." She spoke rather loudly, obviously with the intention of slighting me. "Aha," thought I, "you are thoroughly annoyed, my dear Princess! Wait, there is more to come!"

Grushnitsky has been stalking her like a wild beast, never letting her out of his sight. I daresay that tomorrow he will ask someone to present him to Princess Ligo-vskaya. She will be very glad to meet him, for she is bored.

May 16

During the past two days things have been moving fast. Princess Mary decidedly hates me. I have already been told two or three rather biting but nevertheless very flattering epigrams pointed at me. It strikes her as very odd that I who am so accustomed to good society and on such intimate terms with her Petersburg cousins and aunts should make no effort to make her acquaintance. We see each other every day at the spring and on the boulevard, and I do my best to decoy her admirers, the glittering adjutants, pallid Moscovites and others—with almost invariable success. I have always loathed entertaining guests, but now I have a full house every day, for dinner, supper and a game of cards, and lo, my champagne triumphs over the magnetism of her eyes!

Yesterday I met her at Chelakhov's shop where she was bargaining for a splendid Persian rug. The Princess pleaded with her mother not to begrudge the money, for the rug would look so well in her room.... I overbid forty rubles and walked away with the rug, and was rewarded with a look of the most bewitching fury. At dinner time I deliberately had my Cherkess horse led past her windows with the rug thrown over its back. Werner who was visiting them at the time told me that the effect of the spectacle was most dramatic. The Princess wants to raise a levy against me; I have already noticed that in her presence two of the adjutants give me very curt nods, though they dine with me every day.

Grushnitsky has assumed a mysterious air; he walks

with his hands behind his back oblivious of everybody. His leg has suddenly healed so that he scarcely limps. He found an occasion to engage the old Princess in conversation and to pay a compliment to Princess Mary; the latter apparently is not too discriminating, for ever since she has been responding to his bows with the most charming smile.

"You are sure you do not wish to meet the Ligovskys?" he asked me yesterday.

"Positive."

"Really! It's the pleasantest house at the spa. All the best local society. . . ."

"My dear friend, I'm frightfully fed up with non-local society, let alone the local. Have you been calling on them?"

"Not yet. I have no more than talked with the Princess once or twice. You know how unpleasant it is to fish for an invitation, though it is done here. . . . It would be another matter if I had epaulettes. . . ."

"My dear fellow! You are far more interesting as you are. You simply do not know how to take advantage of your favourable position. Don't you know that a soldier's greatcoat makes you a hero and a martyr in the eyes of any sensitive young lady?"

Grushnitsky smiled complacently.

"What nonsense!" he said.

"I am sure," I went on, "that the Princess has fallen in love with you."

He blushed to the roots of his hair and put on an offended air.

O vanity! Thou art the lever with which Archimedes hoped to raise the globe! . . .

"You're always joking," he said, pretending to be angry. "In the first place she barely knows me. . . ."

"Women love only the men they don't know."

"But I have no particular desire to please her. I merely wish to make the acquaintance of a pleasant household, and it would indeed be absurd to entertain any hopes whatsoever. . . . Now you Petersburg ladykillers are



“The Battle at Valerik”, watercolour by Lermontov. In a letter he wrote:
“The gully where the fray was fought smelt of blood for an hour after.”



An episode in the battle at Valerik. A
drawing by Lermontov.



The house in Pyatigorsk where Lermontov spent the last month of his life.
This is now a memorial museum. Photograph.



The desk, at which Lermontov wrote his "On the
Death of the Poet", is from his Petersburg house.



Lermontov. July 1840. After the battle at Valerik, Palen made pencil portraits of some of the men who had been in the fighting. This drawing of Lermontov, perhaps his best portrait, was done from nature in the tent.

another matter: you only have to look once for a woman to melt. . . . By the way, Pechorin, do you know what the young Princess said about you?"

"What? Has she already spoken to you about me?"

"You have no reason to rejoice, though. Once quite by chance I entered into conversation with her at the spring; her third remark was, 'Who is that gentleman with the unpleasant, heavy-eyed expression? He was with you when. . . .' She blushed and was reluctant to mention the day, recalling her charming little exploit. 'You need not mention the day,' I replied, 'for I shall always remember it. . . .' Pechorin, my friend, I cannot congratulate you, for she thinks ill of you. . . . It is a pity, really, because Mary is very charming!"

It must be noted that Grushnitsky is one of those who in speaking of a woman they hardly know call her *my Mary* or *my Sophie* if only she has had the good fortune to attract them.

Assuming a serious mien I replied:

"Yes, she is rather good-looking. . . . Only take care, Grushnitsky! Russian young ladies for the most part go in only for Platonic love with no intentions of matrimony, and Platonic love is most disturbing. It seems to me that the Princess is one of those women who wish to be amused; if she is bored for two minutes in your company you are irrevocably doomed. Your silence must arouse her curiosity, your conversation must never completely satisfy her; you must keep her in a state of suspense all the time; ten times she will defy public opinion for your sake and call it sacrifice, and as a recompense she will begin to torment you and end up by saying simply that she cannot tolerate you. If you do not gain the ascendancy over her, even her first kiss will not give you the right to a second. She will flirt with you to her heart's content and a year or two later marry an ugly beast in obedience to her mother's will; then she will begin to assure you that she is unhappy, that she had loved only one man—that is, you—but that fate had not ordained that she be joined to him because he wore a

soldier's greatcoat, though beneath that thick grey garment there beat an ardent and noble heart. . . ."

Grushnitsky smote the table with his fist and began to pace up and down the room.

I shook with laughter inwardly and even smiled a couple of times, but luckily he did not notice it. He is clearly in love, for he has become more credulous than ever: he even wears a new niello-silver ring of local workmanship, which struck me as suspicious. On closer inspection what do you think I saw? The name *Mary* engraved in small letters on the inside and next to it the date when she picked up that famous tumbler. I said nothing of my discovery; I do not want to extract any confessions from him; I want him to make me his confidant by his own choice—and that's when I am going to enjoy myself. . . .

.
Today I got up late, and by the time I reached the spring no one was there. It was getting hot, white fluffy clouds raced across the sky away from the snow-capped mountains promising a thunderstorm. Mashuk's summit was smoking like an extinguished torch, and around it grey tatters of clouds arrested in their flight and seemingly caught in the mountain brambles, writhed and crawled like serpents. The atmosphere was charged with electricity. I took the vine-flanked avenue leading to the grotto; I felt depressed. I was thinking of the young woman with the mole on her cheek whom the doctor had mentioned. What was she doing here? And was it she? And why did I think it was she? Why was I so certain about it? Are there so few women with moles on their cheeks? Ruminating thus I reached the grotto. A woman was seated on a stone bench in the cool shade of its roof; she was wearing a straw hat, a black shawl was wrapped round her shoulders, and her head was lowered so that the hat concealed her face. I was about to turn back so as not to disturb her meditations when she looked up at me.

"Vera!" I cried out involuntarily.

She started and turned pale. "I knew you were here," she said. I sat down next to her and took her hand. A long-forgotten tremor shot through my veins at the sound of that sweet voice. Her deep, tranquil eyes looked straight into mine; in them I could read distress and something akin to a reproach.

"We have not seen each other for so long," said I.

"Yes, and we both have changed a great deal."

"You mean, you do not love me any more!"

"I am married!" she said.

"Again? Some years ago there was the same reason, but in spite of that. . . ."

She snatched her hand away and her cheeks flamed.

"Perhaps you are in love with your second husband?"

She made no reply and turned away.

"Or maybe he is very jealous?"

Silence.

"Well, he must be a fine, handsome fellow, very rich, I suppose, and you are afraid that. . . ." I looked at her and was startled; her face expressed dire distress, and tears glistened in her eyes.

"Tell me," she whispered at last, "does it give you so much pleasure to torment me? I ought to hate you. Ever since we have known each other you have brought me nothing but pain. . . ." Her voice shook, and she leaned towards me resting her head on my breast.

"Perhaps," I thought, "that is why you loved me, for joy is forgotten, but sorrow never. . . ."

I pressed her close to me and we remained thus for a long time. Then our lips met and merged in a burning, rapturous kiss; her hands were ice-cold, her head feverishly hot. There began one of those conversations that make no sense on paper, that cannot be repeated or even remembered, for the import of words is substituted and enriched by that of sounds, just as in Italian opera.

She is resolved that I should not meet her husband, who is the lame old man I caught a glimpse of on the boulevard. She married him for the sake of her son. He is rich and suffers from rheumatism. I did not allow my-

self a single disparaging remark about him, for she respects him like a father—and will deceive him as a husband.... A queer thing, the human heart, and a woman's heart in particular!

Vera's husband, Semyon Vasilyevich G...v, is a distant relative of Princess Ligovskaya. They are next door neighbours, and Vera is often at the Princess'. I promised her that I would meet the Ligovskys and dangle after Princess Mary so as to divert attention from her. This does not interfere with my plans at all and I will have a good time....

A good time! Yes, I have already passed that period of spiritual life when people seek happiness alone and when the heart must need love someone passionately; now I only want to be loved, and then only by very few. As a matter of fact, I believe one constant attachment would suffice for me—a wretched sentimental habit!

It has always struck me as queer that I had never become the slave of the woman I loved; on the contrary, I have always acquired an invincible sway over their mind and heart without any effort on my part. Why is that? Was it because I have never particularly prized anything and they have been afraid to let me slip out of their hands for a moment? Or was it the magnetic appeal of physical strength? Or simply because I have never met a woman with strength of character?

I must admit that I do not care for women with a mind of their own—it does not suit them!

Though I recall now that once, but only once, I loved a woman with a strong mind I never could conquer.... We parted enemies, yet had I met her five years later the parting might have been quite different....

Vera is ill, very ill, although she will not admit it; I am afraid she has consumption or the disease they call *fièvre lente*—not a Russian ailment at all and hence it has no name in our language.

The thunderstorm overtook us in the grotto and kept us there another half an hour. She did not make me vow to be faithful to her, nor did she ask me whether I had

loved others since we parted. . . . She trusted me again as wholeheartedly as before—and I shall not deceive her; she is the only woman in the world I would not have the heart to deceive. I know that we shall part again soon, perhaps forever. We shall both go our different ways to the grave, but I shall always cherish her memory. I have always told her so and she believes me, though she says she does not.

At length we parted, and I stood there following her with my eyes until her bonnet disappeared behind the bushes and rocks. My heart contracted painfully, just as when we parted the first time. Oh, how I revelled in this feeling! Was it youth with its beneficent tempests reasserting itself, or merely its farewell glance, a parting gift—a souvenir? And to think that I still look like a boy; though my face is pale, it is still fresh, my limbs are supple and graceful, my locks thick and curly, eyes flashing, and the blood courses swiftly through my veins. . . .

On coming home, I mounted my horse and galloped into the steppe, for I love riding a mettlesome horse through the tall grass, with the desert wind in my face, greedily drinking in the fragrant air and gazing into the blue distance to discern hazy outlines of objects that grow more distinct every moment. Whatever sorrow weighs down the heart or anxiety plagues the mind, it all is immediately dispersed, and a peace settles over the soul as physical fatigue prevails over mental unrest. There are no feminine eyes I would not forget when gazing on the wooded mountains bathed in the southern sunshine, contemplating the blue sky, or listening to the roar of the torrent falling from crag to crag.

I should imagine the Cossack sentinels standing drowsily in their watchtowers must have been sorely puzzled on seeing me galloping along without aim or drift, for they most likely took me for a Cherkess on account of my costume. As a matter of fact I had been told that mounted and wearing Cherkess costume I look more like a Kabardian than many Kabardians. And indeed, as far

as this noble battle garb is concerned I am a perfect dandy: not an extra bit of braiding, costly weapons in the simplest setting, the fur on my cap neither too long nor too short, leggings and soft-leather boots fitting perfectly, white *beshmiet* and dark-brown Cherkess coat. I practised long the mountaineers' way of sitting a horse; and nothing so flatters my vanity as praise for my ability to ride a horse as the Caucasians do. I keep four horses, one for myself and three for my friends, so as to avoid the boredom of riding out alone through the fields, but though they are pleased to have my horses to ride they never ride with me. It was already six o'clock in the afternoon when I remembered that it was time for dinner; moreover, my horse was exhausted. I rode out onto the road leading from Pyatigorsk to the German colony where the spa society frequently goes *en pique-nique*. The road winds its way through the shrubbery, dipping into shallow gullies where noisy rivulets flow in the shadow of the tall grasses; all around are the towering blue terraces of Beshtau, Zmeinaya, Zheleznaya and Lysaya mountains. I had stopped in one of these gullies to water my horse when a noisy and brilliant cavalcade appeared down the road; there were ladies in black and sky-blue riding habits and gentlemen in garb that was a mixture of Cherkess and Nizhni-Novgorod. Grushnitsky and Princess Mary rode in front.

Ladies who come to take the waters still believe the stories of Cherkess raids in broad daylight, and that probably explains why Grushnitsky had belted a sabre and a pair of pistols over his soldier's greatcoat; he looked rather ridiculous in these heroic vestments. A tall bush concealed me from them, but I had a perfect view through the foliage and could tell by the expression of their faces that the conversation was in a sentimental vein. Finally they neared the dip in the road. Grushnitsky gripped the reins of the Princess' horse, and now I could hear the end of their conversation:

"And you wish to remain in the Caucasus all your life?" said the Princess.

"What is Russia to me?" replied her escort. "A country where thousands of people will despise me because they are wealthier than I, whereas here—why here this thick greatcoat was no obstacle to my making your acquaintance. . . ."

"On the contrary. . .," said the Prince, blushing.

Grushnitsky looked pleased. He continued:

"Here my days will flow thick and fast under the bullets of barbarians, and if only God should send me each year one bright feminine glance, one like. . . ."

By this time they drew level with me; I struck my horse with the whip and rode out from behind the bushes.

"*Mon dieu, un Circassien!*" cried the Princess in terror.

To reassure her I replied in French, with a slight bow:

"*Ne craignez rien, madame, je ne suis pas plus dangereux que votre cavalier.*"

She was thrown into confusion—I wonder why? Because of her mistake, or because she thought my reply insolent? I wish indeed that the latter were the case. Grushnitsky glanced at me with displeasure.

Late that night, that is, about eleven o'clock, I went for a walk along the lime avenue of the boulevard. The town was fast asleep, and only here and there a light shone in a window. On three sides loomed the black ridges of the spurs of Mashuk, on whose summit lay an ominous cloud; the moon was rising in the east; in the distance the snow-capped summits glistened in a silvery fringe. The cries of sentries intermingled with the noise of the hot springs now released for the night. At times the ringing hoofbeats echoed down the street accompanied by the creaking of a covered ox-waggon and the plaintive chant of a Tatar refrain. I sat down on a bench and sank into thought. I felt a need to unburden my thoughts in a friendly talk . . . but with whom? What was Vera doing now, I wondered. I would have given much to press her hand just then.

Suddenly I heard quick, uneven steps. . . . Probably Grushnitsky . . . and so it was.

"Where have you been?"

"At Princess Ligovskaya's," he said with an air of importance. "How beautifully Mary sings!"

"You know what," said I, "I'll wager she does not know you are a cadet, but thinks you are a degraded officer."

"Maybe. What do I care!" he said absently.

"Well, I just mentioned it...."

"Do you know that you made her terribly angry? She thought it was downright insolence on your part. I had a stiff job trying to assure her that you are so well bred and so much at home in society that you could not have had any intention of insulting her. She says you have an impudent look and must be very conceited."

"She is right.... You seem to be taking her part, don't you?"

"I'm sorry I haven't won that right yet."

"Oho!" thought I. "Evidently he already has hopes...."

"It'll only be worse for you," Grushnitsky went on. "Now it will be hard for you to meet them—what a pity! It is one of the pleasantest houses I know...."

I smiled inwardly.

"The pleasantest house for me just now is my own," said I yawning, and rose to go.

"Still you must admit that you regret it?"

"What nonsense! I could be at the Princess' tomorrow night if I wish...."

"We'll see about that...."

"To please you I can even pay court to the Princess...."

"That is, if she is willing to talk to you...."

"I shall wait till she gets bored with your conversation.... Good night!"

"And I'll go for a prowl—couldn't fall asleep for anything now.... Look here, let's go to the restaurant, one can gamble there.... Violent sensations are what I need tonight."

"I hope you lose...."

I went home.

May 21

Nearly a week has passed and I have not met the Ligovskys yet. Am waiting for an opportunity. Grushnitsky follows Princess Mary about like a shadow, and they talk incessantly. I wonder when she'll get tired of him. Her mother takes no notice of what is going on because he is *not eligible*. There is the logic of mothers for you! I have caught two or three tender looks—this must be put a stop to.

Yesterday Vera made her first appearance at the spring. Since our meeting in the grotto she has not left the house. We dipped our tumblers into the water at the same time and as she bent down she whispered to me:

"You don't want to go to the Ligovskys! It is the only place where we can meet."

A reproach—how boring! But I deserved it.

By the way, there is a subscription ball at the restaurant hall, and I intend to dance the mazurka with Princess Mary.

May 22

The restaurant hall was transformed into a Nobles' Club hall. By nine o'clock everybody was there. Princess Ligovskaya and her daughter were among the last to arrive. Many of the ladies eyed Princess Mary with envy and ill will, for she dresses with very good taste. Those who consider themselves the local aristocrats concealed their envy and attached themselves to her. What else could be expected? Wherever there is feminine society, there is an immediate division into the upper and lower circles. Grushnitsky stood among the crowd outside the window, pressing his face to the glass and devouring his goddess with his eyes; in passing she gave him a barely perceptible nod. He beamed like the sun. . . . The first dance was a polonaise; then the orchestra struck up a waltz. Spurs jingled and coattails whirled.

I stood behind a stout lady under a rose-coloured plumage. The splendour of her gown was reminiscent of the farthingale age and the blotchiness of her coarse skin of the happy epoch of the black-taffeta beauty spot. The biggest wart on her neck was concealed beneath a clasp. She was saying to her partner, a captain of dragoons:

"This Princess Ligovskaya is a minx. Think of it, she bumped into me and did not bother to apologise, and actually turned round to look at me through her lorgnette.... *C'est impayable!* What cause has she to give herself airs? It would do her good to be taught a lesson...."

"Leave it to me!" replied the obliging captain and repaired to another room.

I went over at once to the Princess and asked for the waltz, taking advantage of the freedom of the local customs which allow one to dance with strangers.

She was scarcely able to suppress a smile and thus conceal her triumph, but quickly enough she managed to assume a totally indifferent and even severe mien. She carelessly laid her hand on my shoulder, tilted her head a bit to one side, and off we started. I know no other waist so voluptuous and supple. Her sweet breath caressed my face; now and then a ringlet broke loose from its companions in the whirl of the dance and brushed my burning cheek.... I made three turns round the room. (She waltzes delightfully.) She was panting, her eyes looked blurred and her parted lips could hardly whisper the necessary "*Merci, monsieur*".

After a few minutes of silence I said, assuming the humblest of expressions:

"I have heard, Princess, that while still an utter stranger to you, I had the misfortune to evoke your displeasure, that you found me impertinent.... Is that really true?"

"And you would like to strengthen that opinion now?" she replied, with an ironical little grimace that, incidentally, matched well the quick mobility of her features.

"If I had the audacity to offend you in any way, will you allow me the greater audacity of asking your forgiveness? Really, I should like very much to prove that you were mistaken in your opinion of me..."

"That will be a rather difficult task for you..."

"Why?"

"Because you don't come to our house and these balls probably will not be repeated frequently."

That means, thought I, their doors are closed to me for all time.

"Do you know, Princess," said I with a shade of annoyance, "that one should never spurn a repentant sinner, for out of sheer desperation he may become doubly sinful ... and then..."

Laughter and whispering around us made me break off and look round. A few paces away stood a group of men, among them the captain of dragoons who had expressed his hostile intentions toward the charming Princess. He seemed to be highly pleased with something, rubbing his hands, laughing loudly and exchanging winks with his comrades. Suddenly a gentleman in a tail coat and with long moustaches and a red face stepped out of their midst and walked unsteadily towards the Princess. He was obviously drunk. Stopping in front of the bewildered Princess, with his hands behind his back, he directed his bleary grey eyes at her and said in a wheezy treble:

"*Permettez* ... oh, dash it... I just want to have the mazurka..."

"What do you want, sir?" she said with a tremor in her voice, casting about a beseeching glance. But, alas, her mother was far away, nor were there any of the gallants she knew nearby, excepting one adjutant who, I believe, saw what was going on, but hid behind the crowd to avoid being involved in an unpleasant scene.

"Well, well!" said the drunken gentleman, winking at the captain of dragoons who was spurring him on with encouraging signs. "You would rather not? I once more have the honour of inviting you *pour mazure*.... Maybe

you think I'm drunk? That's all right! Dance all the better, I assure you...."

I saw she was on the verge of fainting from terror and mortification.

I stepped up to the intoxicated gentleman, gripped him firmly by the arm and looking him straight in the eyes asked him to go away, because, I added, the Princess had already promised me the mazurka.

"Oh, I see! Another time, then!" he said, with a laugh, and rejoined his cronies who, looking rather crestfallen, guided him out of the room.

I was rewarded with a charming glance.

The Princess went over to her mother and told her what had happened, and the latter sought me out in the crowd to thank me. She told me that she knew my mother and was a friend of a half a dozen of my aunts.

"I simply cannot understand how it is we haven't met before," she added, "though you must admit that it's your own fault. You hold yourself so aloof you know, really. I hope the atmosphere of my drawing room will dispel your spleen.... What do you say?"

I replied with one of those polite phrases everyone must have in store for occasions like this.

The quadrilles dragged out interminably.

Finally the mazurka started and I sat down beside the young Princess.

I made no reference to the drunken gentleman, nor to my previous conduct, nor yet to Grushnitsky. The impression the unpleasant incident had made on her gradually dispersed, her face glowed, and she chatted charmingly. Her conversation was pointed without pretensions to wit, it was vivacious and free of restraint, and some of her observations were profound indeed.... I let her understand in a confused, rambling sort of way that I had long been attracted by her. She bent her head and blushed faintly.

"You are a strange man!" she said presently with a constrained smile, raising her velvety eyes to me.

"I did not wish to meet you," I continued, "because

you are surrounded by too great a crowd of admirers and I was afraid it might engulf me completely."

"You had nothing to fear. They are all exceedingly tiresome...."

"All of them? Certainly not all?"

She looked at me closely as if trying to recall something, then blushed faintly again and finally said in a decided tone: "*All of them!*"

"Even my friend Grushnitsky?"

"Is he your friend?" she asked dubiously.

"He is."

"He, of course, cannot be classed as a bore."

"But an unfortunate, perhaps?" said I, laughingly.

"Of course! Why are you amused? I would like to see you in his place."

"Why? I was a cadet once myself, and believe me, that was the finest period of my life!"

"Is he a cadet?" she asked quickly, adding a moment later: "And I thought...."

"What did you think?"

"Nothing, nothing at all.... Who is that lady?"

The conversation took a different turn and this subject was not resumed.

The mazurka ended and we parted—until we should meet again. The ladies went home. Going in for supper, I met Werner.

"Aha," he said, "so that's that! And you said you would only make the Princess' acquaintance by rescuing her from certain death?"

"I did better," I replied, "I saved her from fainting at the ball!"

"What happened? Tell me!"

"No, you will have to guess. O you, who divines everything under the sun!"

May 23

I was walking on the boulevard about seven o'clock in the evening. Grushnitsky, seeing me from afar, came

over, a ridiculously rapturous light gleaming in his eyes. He clasped my hand tightly and said in a tragic tone:

"I thank you, Pechorin.... You understand me, don't you?"

"No, I don't. In any case there is nothing to thank me for," I replied, for I really had no good deed on my conscience.

"Why, what about yesterday? Have you forgotten? Mary told me everything...."

"You don't say you already share everything in common? And gratitude too?"

"Listen," said Grushnitsky with an impressive air. "Please don't make fun of my love if you wish to remain my friend.... You see, I love her madly ... and I believe, I hope, that she loves me too.... I have a favour to ask of you: you will be visiting them this evening, promise me to observe everything. I know you are experienced in these matters and you know women better than I do. O women, women! Who really does understand them? Their smiles disavow their glances, their words promise and beguile, but the tone of their voice repulses. They either divine in a flash your innermost thought or they do not grasp the most obvious hint.... Take the Princess, for instance: yesterday her eyes glowed with passion when they dwelt on me but now they are lustreless and cold...."

"That perhaps is the effect of the waters," replied I.

"You always look at the seamy side of things ... you materialist!" he added scornfully. "But let us get down to other matters." Pleased with this bad pun, his spirits rose.

Around nine o'clock we went together to the Princess' house.

In passing Vera's windows I saw her looking out, and we exchanged a cursory glance. She entered the Ligovskys' drawing room soon after us. The old Princess introduced her to me as a kinswoman. Tea was served, there were many guests, and the conversation was general. I did my best to charm the old Princess, told

jokes and made her laugh heartily several times; her daughter too wanted to laugh more than once, but she suppressed the desire so as not to abandon the role she assumed, for she believes that languor is becoming to her—and perhaps she is right. I believe Grushnitsky was very glad that my gaiety did not infect her.

After tea we all repaired to the sitting room.

“Are you pleased with my obedience, Vera?” I asked as I passed her.

She gave me a look full of love and gratitude. I am used to these glances; but there was a time when they were my heart’s delight. Princess Ligovskaya made her daughter sit down to the piano and everybody begged her to sing. I said nothing, and taking advantage of the hubbub withdrew to a window with Vera who intimated that she had something to say of great importance to both of us. It turned out to be nonsense.

My indifference did not please the young Princess, however, as I could guess by the one angry flashing glance she gave me.... How well do I understand this dumb but eloquent conversational means, so brief yet so forceful!

She sang; her voice is pleasant but she sings badly ... as a matter of fact, I did not listen. But Grushnitsky, with his elbows on the piano facing the Princess, devoured her with his eyes, mumbling “*Charmant! Délicieux!*” over and over again.

“Listen,” Vera was saying, “I do not want you to make the acquaintance of my husband, but you must get into the old Princess’ good graces; you can do it easily, you can do anything you wish. We shall meet only here....”

“Nowhere else?”

She coloured and went on:

“You know I am your slave, I never could resist you. And I will be punished for it. Because you will cease to love me! At least I want to save my reputation ... not because of myself, you know that very well. But please don’t torment me as before with idle doubts and

feigned indifference; I may die soon, for I feel I am growing weaker day by day ... but in spite of that I cannot think of the life beyond, I think only of you. You men do not understand the rapture one can find in a glance or a handclasp, but, I swear to you, the sound of your voice fills me with a deep, strange bliss as no passionate kisses ever could do."

In the meantime Princess Mary had stopped singing. A chorus of praise broke out around her. I walked up to her last and said something very casual about her voice.

She pouted and made a mock curtsy.

"It is all the more flattering to me," she said, "because you weren't listening at all. But perhaps you do not care for music?"

"On the contrary, I do, particularly after dinner."

"Grushnitsky is right when he says that your tastes are most prosaic. Even I can see that you appreciate music from the point of view of the gourmand...."

"You are wrong again. I am no gourmand and I have a poor digestion. Nevertheless music after dinner lulls you to sleep and a nap after dinner is good for you; hence I like music in the medical sense. In the evening, on the contrary, it excites my nerves too much, and I find myself either too depressed or too gay. Both are tedious when there is no good reason either to mope or to rejoice; besides, to be downcast in company is ridiculous and excessive gaiety is in bad taste...."

She walked off without waiting for me to finish and sat down beside Grushnitsky. The two engaged in a sentimental conversation: the Princess seemed to respond to his sapient saying in an absent-minded rather inept way, though she simulated interest, and he glanced at her every now and then with a look of surprise as if trying to fathom the cause of the inner turmoil reflected in her troubled eyes.

But I have unravelled your secret, my charming Princess, so beware! You wish to repay me in the same currency by wounding my vanity—but you will not suc-



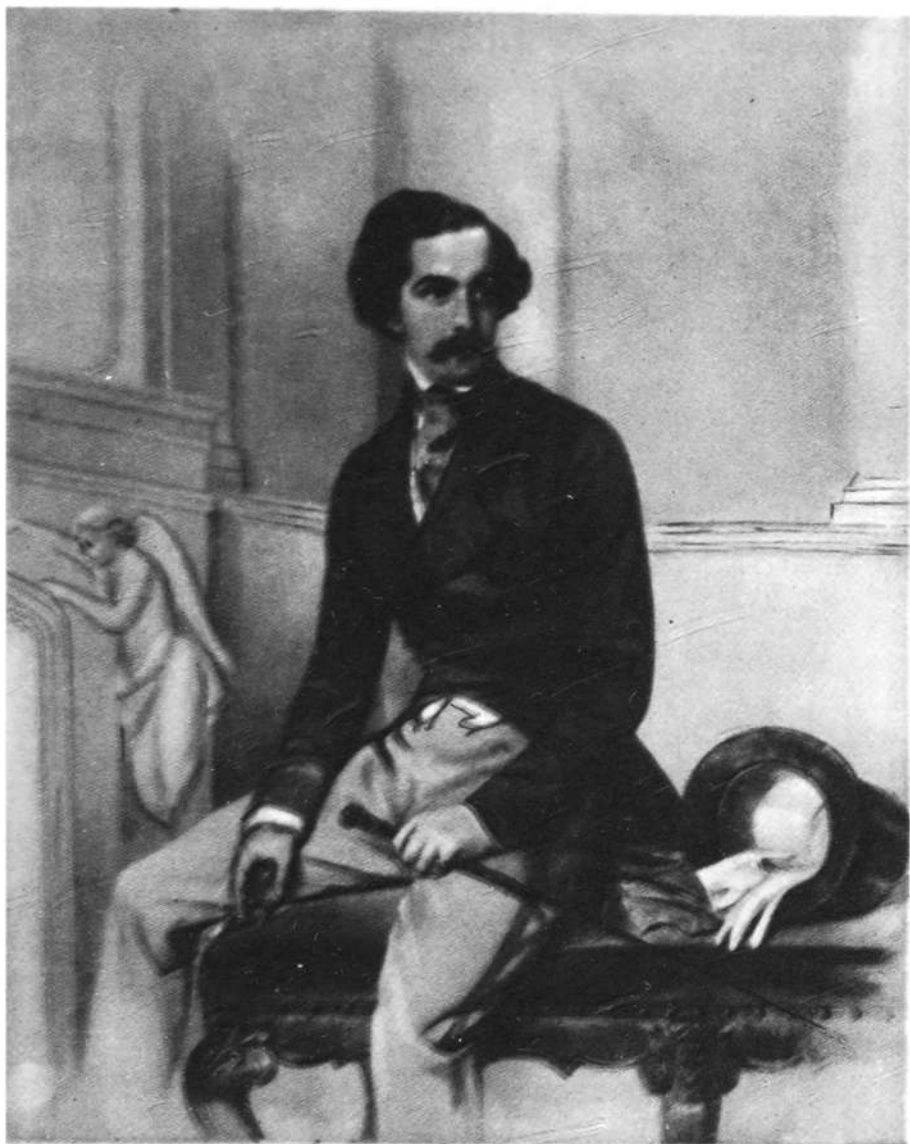
Sophia Karamsina, daughter of the famous historian and the soul of her literary salon in St. Petersburg. On return from his first Caucasian exile Lermontov was a frequent guest in their house.



Lev Pushkin, brother of the poet. Drawing by Orlowsky. Lermontov was good friends with Lev Pushkin when he was in the Caucasus.



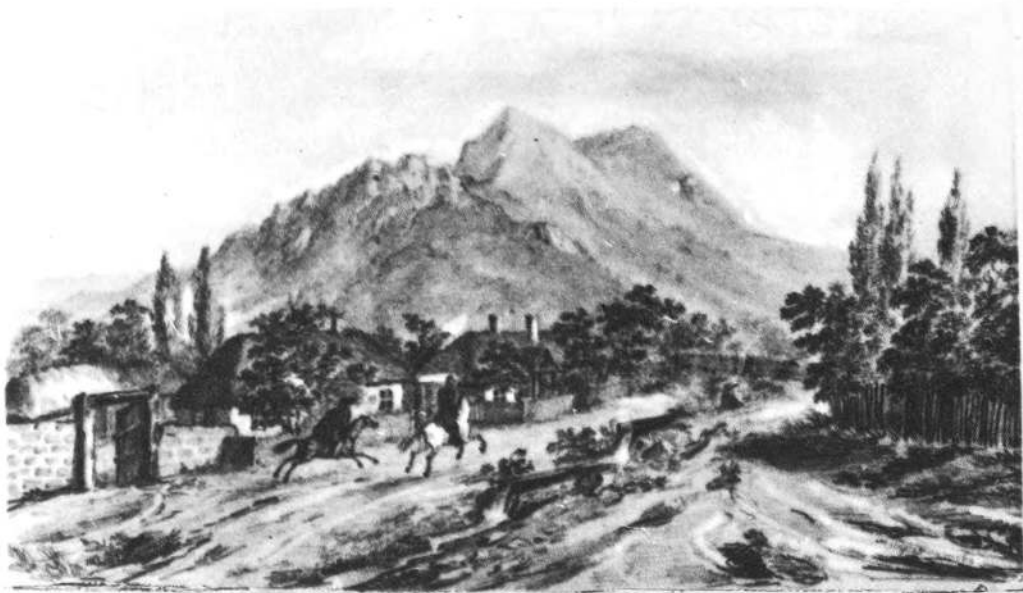
Mikhail Lorer, a Decembrist. After doing a term of hard labour for participation in the December 1825 armed uprising against the tsar's autocracy, Lorer was banished to the Caucasus where he met and made friends with Lermontov. This watercolour portrait was made by Bestuzhev, also a Decembrist, in prison.



Alexei Stolyпин. Lermontov's cousin and best friend who seconded the poet's duel with Martynov.



The Verzilin sisters. A watercolour by an unknown artist. They were the daughters of General Verzilin whose house in Pyatigorsk was frequently visited by Lermontov, and it was there that his quarrel with Martynov, ending in the tragic duel, took place.



Mt. Beshtau near Pyatigorsk with the village Karras at the foot. A drawing made by Lermontov in 1837. This was the road along which he rode to meet Martynov.

ceed! And if you declare war on me, I shall be ruthless.

Several times in the course of the evening I deliberately tried to join in their conversation, but she countered my remarks rather drily, and I finally withdrew feigning resentment. The Princess was triumphant, and so was Grushnitsky. Triumph, my friends, while you may . . . you have not long to triumph! What will happen? I have a presentiment. . . . Upon meeting a woman I have always been able to tell without error whether she will fall in love with me or not. . . .

The remainder of the evening I spent with Vera, and we talked our fill about the past. I really do not know why she loves me so. Especially since she is the only woman who has ever completely understood me with all my petty frailties and evil passions. . . . Can evil indeed be so attractive?

I left together with Grushnitsky. Outside he took my arm and after a long silence said:

"Well, what do you say?"

I wanted to tell him, "You are a fool," but restrained myself and merely shrugged my shoulders.

May 29

All these days I have not once departed from my system. The Princess is beginning to enjoy my conversation. I told her some of the curious incidents of my life, and she is beginning to regard me as an unusual person. I mock at everything under the sun, emotions in particular, and this is beginning to frighten her. She does not dare to launch upon sentimental debates with Grushnitsky when I am present, and already on several occasions she has replied to him with an ironical smile. Yet each time Grushnitsky approaches her I assume a humble air and leave the two alone. The first time I did so she was glad, or tried to look pleased; the second time she lost patience with me, and the third time with Grushnitsky.

"You have very little pride!" she told me yesterday. "Why do you think I prefer Grushnitsky's society?"

I replied that I was sacrificing my own pleasure for a friend's happiness.

"And my pleasure as well," she added.

I looked at her intently and assumed an air of gravity. Then for the rest of the day I did not address her.... She was pensive last night, and even more wistful this morning at the spring. As I walked up to her, she was listening absently to Grushnitsky who, I believe, was discoursing on the beauties of nature, but as soon as she saw me she began to laugh heartily (rather irrelevantly) pretending not to notice me. I withdrew some distance away and watched her out of the corner of my eye; she turned away from her companion and yawned twice. There is no doubt about it: she is bored with Grushnitsky. But I shall not speak to her for another two days.

June 3

I often ask myself why it is that I so persistently seek to win the love of a young girl whom I do not wish to seduce and whom I shall never marry. Why this feminine coquetry? Vera loves me better than Princess Mary ever will. Were she an unconquerable beauty, the difficulty of the undertaking might serve as an inducement....

But far from it! Hence this is not the restless craving for love that torments us in the early years of our youth and casts us from one woman to another until we meet one who cannot endure us; this is the beginning of our constancy—the true unending passion that may mathematically be represented by a line extending from a point into space, the secret of whose endlessness consists merely in the impossibility of attaining the goal, that is, the end.

What is it that spurs me on? Envy of Grushnitsky? Poor chap! He does not deserve it. Or is it the result of that malicious but indomitable impulse to annihilate the blissful illusions of a fellow man in order to have

the petty satisfaction of telling him when in desperation he appeals to us:

"My friend, the same thing happened to me! Yet as you see, I dine, sup and sleep well, and, I hope, will be able to die without any fuss or tears!"

And yet to possess a young soul that has barely burgeoned out is a source of unfathomable delight. It is like a flower whose richest perfume goes out to meet the first ray of the sun; one must pluck it at that very moment and after inhaling its perfume to one's heart's content cast it away on the chance that someone will pick it up. I sense in myself that insatiable avidity that devours everything in its path; and I regard the sufferings and joys of others merely in relation to myself, as food to sustain my spiritual strength. Passion is no longer capable of robbing me of my sanity; my ambition has been crushed by circumstances, but it has manifested itself in new form, for ambition is nothing but lust for power, and my greatest pleasure I derive from subordinating everything around me to my will. Is it not both the first token of power and its supreme triumph to inspire in others the emotions of love, devotion and fear? Is it not the sweetest fare for our vanity to be the cause of pain or joy for someone without the least claim thereto? And what is happiness? Pride gratified. Could I consider myself better and more powerful than anyone else in the world, I should be happy; were everybody to love me, I should find in myself unending well-springs of love. Evil begets evil; one's first suffering awakens a realisation of the pleasure of tormenting another; the idea of evil cannot take root in the mind of man without his desiring to apply it in practice. Someone has said that ideas are organic entities: their very birth imparts them form, and this form is action. He in whose brain the most ideas are born is more active than others, and because of this a genius shackled to an office desk must either die or lose his mind, just as a man of powerful physique who leads a quiet, sedentary life dies of an apoplectic stroke.

Passions are nothing more than ideas at the first stage of their development; they belong to the heart's youth, and he is foolish who thinks they will stir him all his life. Many a placid river begins in roaring waterfalls, but not a single stream leaps and froths all the way to the sea. Frequently this placidity is a symptom of great though latent force. The fullness and depth of emotions and thought precludes furious impulses, for the soul in its suffering or rejoicing is fully alive to what is taking place and conscious that so it must be; it knows that were there no tempests the constant heat of the sun would shrivel it; it is imbued with its own life, fostering and chastising itself as a mother her beloved child. Only in this state of supreme self-cognition can a man appreciate the divine judgment.

Reading over this page I notice that I have digressed far from my subject. But what of it? For I am writing this journal for myself and hence anything I jot down will in time become a precious memory to me.

.
Grushnitsky came and flung himself on my neck—he had received his commission. We had some champagne. Doctor Werner came in immediately after.

"I don't offer you my felicitations," he said to Grushnitsky.

"Why?"

"Because the soldier's greatcoat suits you very well and you will have to admit that an infantry officer's uniform tailored here at the spa will not add anything of interest to you.... You see, so far you have been an exception, whereas now you will be quite commonplace."

"Say what you will, doctor, you cannot prevent me from rejoicing. He does not know," Grushnitsky whispered in my ear, "what hopes I attach to these epaulettes. O epaulettes, epaulettes! Your stars are little guiding stars.... No! I am perfectly happy now."

"Are you coming with us for a walk to the chasm?" I asked him.

"Oh no! I wouldn't show myself to the Princess for anything until my new uniform is ready."

"Shall I tell her about your good fortune?"

"Please don't, I want it to be a surprise."

"Tell me though, how are you getting along with her?"

He was embarrassed and pondered a while. He would have liked to brag about it and lie, but his conscience forbade him, and at the same time he was ashamed to confess the truth.

"Do you think she loves you?"

"Does she love me? For goodness sake, Pechorin, what ideas you have! How can you expect it so soon? And even if she did, a respectable woman would not say so...."

"Good! You probably believe that a respectable man too must conceal his passion."

"Ah, my good fellow, there is a proper way to do everything. Many things are not said but guessed...."

"True enough.... Only the love we read in a woman's eyes is non-committal whereas words.... Take care, Grushnitsky, she is deceiving you...."

"She?" he replied, raising his eyes to the sky and smiling complacently. "I pity you, Pechorin!"

He left.

In the evening a large company set out on foot for the chasm.

The local savants are of the opinion that this chasm is nothing but an extinct crater. It is located on the slope of Mashuk within a verst of the town. It is approached by a narrow path winding through the brush and crags. As we climbed the mountainside I offered my arm to the Princess, who did not relinquish it throughout the entire walk.

Our conversation started with scandal; I began to go through our acquaintances both present and absent, first describing their ridiculous aspects, then their bad traits. My gall was up and after starting off in jest I finished

in deadly earnest. At first she was amused, then alarmed.

"You are a dangerous man!" she told me. "I would rather risk a murderer's knife in the forest than be flayed by your tongue. I beg of you quite earnestly—if you should ever take it into your mind to speak ill of me, take a knife instead and kill me. I believe you would not find it too difficult to do."

"Do I look like a murderer?"

"You are worse...."

I thought for a moment and then said, assuming a deeply touched mien:

"Yes, such has been my lot since childhood. Everyone read signs of non-existent evil traits in my features. But since they were expected to be there, they did make their appearance. Because I was reserved, they said I was sly, so I grew reticent. I was keenly aware of good and evil, but instead of being fondled I was insulted and so I became spiteful. I was sulky while other children were merry and talkative, but though I felt superior to them I was considered inferior. So I grew envious. I was ready to love the whole world, but no one understood me, and I learned to hate. My cheerless youth passed in conflict with myself and society, and fearing ridicule I buried my finest feelings deep in my heart, and there they died. I spoke the truth, but nobody believed me, so I began to practice duplicity. Having come to know society and its mainsprings, I became versed in the art of living and saw how others were happy without that proficiency, enjoying gratuitously the boons I had so painfully striven for. It was then that despair was born in my breast—not the despair that is cured with a pistol, but a cold, impotent desperation concealed under a polite exterior and a good-natured smile. I became a moral cripple; I had lost one half of my soul, for it had shrivelled, dried up and died, and I had cut it off and cast it away, while the other half stirred and lived, adapted to serve every comer. No one noticed this because no one suspected there had been another half;

now, however, you awakened memories of it in me, and what I have just done is to read its epitaph to you. Many regard all epitaphs ridiculous, but I do not, particularly when I remember what rests beneath them. Of course, I am not asking you to share my opinion; if what I have said seems ridiculous to you, please laugh, though I warn you that it will not annoy me in the slightest."

At that moment our eyes met, and I saw that hers swam with tears. Her arm resting on mine trembled, her cheeks were flaming. She was sorry for me! Compassion—that emotion which all women so easily yield to—had sunk its talons into her inexperienced heart. Throughout the walk she was absent-minded and flirted with no one—and that is a great omen indeed!

We reached the chasm. The other ladies left their escorts, but she did not release my arm. The witticisms of the local dandies did not amuse her; the abruptness of the bluff on the brink of which she stood did not alarm her, though the other young ladies squealed and closed their eyes.

On the way back I did not resume the sad conversation, but to my idle questions and jests she gave only brief and distracted answers.

"Have you ever been in love?" I finally asked her

She looked at me intently, shook her head and again was lost in thought. It was evident that she wanted to say something but did not know where to begin. Her breast heaved. . . . Indeed, a muslin sleeve affords but slight protection, and an electric tremor ran from my arm to hers; most passions begin thus, and we frequently deceive ourselves when we think that a woman loves us for our physical or moral qualities; true, they prepare the ground, dispose her heart to receive the sacred flame, but nevertheless it is the first contact that decides the issue.

"I have been very amiable today, have I not?" the Princess said with a forced smile when we returned from our walk.

We parted.

She is displeased with herself; she accuses herself of being cool. Ah, this is the first and most important triumph! Tomorrow she will want to reward me. I know it all by rote—and that is what makes it all so boring.

June 4

I have just seen Vera. She nagged me to death with jealousy. I believe the Princess has chosen to confide her secrets of the heart to Vera. An appropriate choice, indeed!

"I can guess what it all will lead to," Vera said to me. "It would be better if you told me frankly now that you love her."

"But supposing I do not love her?"

"Then why pursue her, disturb her and stir her imagination? Oh, I know you too well! If you want me to believe you, go to Kislovodsk a week from now. We shall move there the day after tomorrow. Princess Ligovskaya is remaining here a little longer. Rent the apartment next door to ours; we shall stay in the large house near the fountain, on the mezzanine floor. Princess Ligovskaya will occupy the floor below, and next door there is another house belonging to the same owner which has not been taken yet. . . . Will you come?"

I promised, and the very same day sent a man to rent the apartments.

Grushnitsky dropped in at six in the evening and announced that his uniform would be ready the next day, just in time for the ball.

"At last I shall dance with her all evening. . . . And talk to my heart's content," he added.

"When is the ball?"

"Tomorrow. Didn't you know? It's quite a gala event, and the local authorities are sponsoring it."

"Let's go out on the boulevard."

"Goodness no, not in this hideous greatcoat. . . ."

"What? Do you mean to say you don't like it any more?"

I went out alone, and, encountering Princess Mary, asked her for the mazurka. She looked surprised and pleased.

"I thought you danced only when necessary, like the last time," she said, smiling very prettily.

She seemed to be totally unaware of Grushnitsky's absence.

"You will have a pleasant surprise tomorrow," I said to her.

"What is it?"

"It's a secret. . . . You will see for yourself at the ball."

I wound up the evening at Princess Ligovskaya's. There were no guests besides Vera and a very amusing old man. I was in good form and improvised all kinds of fantastic stories. Princess Mary sat opposite me listening to my chatter with an attention so great, intense and even tender that I felt a pang of remorse. What had become of her vivacity, her coquetry, her caprices, her haughty air, her contemptuous smile and absent gaze?

Vera noticed it all and a deep sadness was reflected on her wan face; she sat in the shadows at the window sunk in a large armchair. I was sorry for her. . . .

Then I related the whole dramatic story of our friendship and love, naturally using fictitious names.

So vividly did I describe my tender feelings, anxieties and raptures, and portrayed her actions and character in so favourable a light that she could not but forgive me my flirtation with the Princess.

She got up, moved to a seat closer to us and recovered her spirits . . . and only at two o'clock in the morning did we recollect that physician's orders were to retire at eleven.

June 5

Half an hour before the ball Grushnitsky came to my apartment in the full splendour of an infantry officer's uniform. A bronze chain on which a double lorgnette dangled was attached to his third button; he wore epaulettes of incredible size which curled up like Cupid's

wings; his boots squeaked; in his left hand he carried a pair of brown kid gloves and his cap, while with his right he kept twirling his frizzled forelock into tiny curls. Complacency tinged with a certain hesitancy was written on his face. His festive appearance and his proud carriage would have made me roar with laughter had that been in keeping with my intentions.

He threw his cap and gloves on the table and began to pull at his coattails and preen himself in front of the mirror. An enormous black kerchief twisted into a high stiffener for his cravat, with bristles that supported his chin, showed a half an inch above the collar; he thought that too little and pulled it up to his ears. The exertion made his face grow purple, for the collar of the uniform coat was very tight and uncomfortable.

"They say you have been hard after my Princess these days," he said rather nonchalantly without looking at me.

"That sort of thing is not for the likes of us," replied I, repeating a favourite saying by one of the cleverest rakes of the past once sung by Pushkin.

"Say, does this thing fit me well? Confound the Jew! It's tight under the armpits. Have you any perfume?"

"For goodness sake, what more do you want? You already reek of rose pomade."

"Never mind. Let's have some. . . ."

He poured half a phial on his cravat, handkerchief and sleeves.

"Going to dance?" he asked.

"I don't think so."

"I am afraid the Princess and I will have to start the mazurka, and I scarcely know a single figure. . . ."

"Did you ask her for the mazurka?"

"No, not yet. . . ."

"Take care no one anticipates you. . . ."

"You're right, by gad!" he said, slapping his forehead. "Good-bye, I'll go and wait for her at the entrance." He seized his cap and ran off.

Half an hour later I too set out. The streets were dark

and deserted. Around the club rooms or inn—whichever you want to call it—the crowds were gathering. The windows were lighted up, and the evening wind wafted to me the strains of the regimental band. I walked slowly, steeped in melancholy. Can it be, thought I, that my sole mission on earth is to destroy the hopes of others? Ever since I began to live and act, fate has somehow associated me with the denouement of other people's tragedies, as if without me no one could either die or give way to despair! I have been the inevitable fifth-act character, involuntarily playing the detestable role of the hangman or the traitor. What has been fate's object in all this? Has it destined me to be the author of middle-class tragedies and family romances—or a purveyor of tales for, say, the *Reader's Library*?* Who knows? Are there not many who begin life by aspiring to end it like Alexander the Great, or Lord Byron, and yet remain petty civil servants all their lives?

On entering the hall I mingled with the crowd of men and began making observations. Grushnitsky was standing beside the Princess and talking with great ardour; she was listening to him absent-mindedly, looking around and pressing her fan to her lips; her face expressed impatience and her eyes searched for someone. I quietly slipped behind them so as to overhear the conversation.

"You are tormenting me, Princess," Grushnitsky said. "You have changed terribly since I saw you last."

"You too have changed," she replied, throwing him a swift look whose veiled scorn was lost on him.

"I? Changed? Never! You know that is impossible! Whoever has seen you once will carry your divine image with him to the grave...."

"Stop...."

"Why will you not listen now to what you so recently and so often lent a favourable ear?"

"Because I do not like repetition," she replied, laughing.

* A popular monthly magazine published in St. Petersburg.—Ed.

"O, I have been bitterly mistaken! I thought, fool that I am, that at least these epaulettes would give me the right to hope.... Yes, it would have been better to spend the rest of my life in that despicable greatcoat of a soldier to which I perhaps owe your attention."

"Really, the greatcoat becomes you far better...."

At that moment I came up and bowed to the Princess; she blushed slightly, saying hurriedly:

"Don't you think, M'sieu Pechorin, that the grey greatcoat suits M'sieu Grushnitsky much better?"

"I do not agree with you," replied I. "He looks even younger in this uniform."

Grushnitsky could not stand the thrust, for like all boys he lays claim to being a man of years. He thinks that the deep traces of passion on his face can pass for the stamp of years. He threw a furious look at me, stamped his foot and strode away.

"You must admit," I said to the Princess, "that although he has always been very ridiculous he struck you as interesting only a short while ago ... in his grey greatcoat."

She dropped her eyes and said nothing.

Grushnitsky pursued the Princess the whole evening, dancing either with her or vis-à-vis; he devoured her with his eyes, sighed and wearied her with his supplications and reproaches. By the end of the third quadrille she already hated him.

"I did not expect this of you," he said, coming up to me and taking me by the arm.

"What are you talking about?"

"Are you going to dance the mazurka with her?" he asked me in a solemn tone. "She admitted as much to me...."

"Well, what of it? Is it a secret?"

"Of course.... I should have expected it from that hussy, that flirt.... Never mind, I'll take my revenge!"

"Blame your greatcoat or your epaulettes, but why accuse her? Is it her fault that she no longer likes you?"

"Why did she give me reason to hope?"

"Why did you hope? To want something and to strive for it, that I can understand, but whoever hopes?"

"You have won the bet, but not entirely," he said, with a sneer.

The mazurka began. Grushnitsky invited none but the Princess, other cavaliers chose her every minute; it was obviously a conspiracy against me—but that was all for the better. She wanted to talk with me; she was prevented from doing so—good! She would want to all the more.

I pressed her hand once or twice; the second time she pulled her hand away without a word.

"I shall sleep badly tonight," she said to me when the mazurka was over.

"Grushnitsky is to blame for that."

"Oh no!" And her face grew so pensive, so sad, that I promised myself I would kiss her hand that night.

Everybody began to disperse. Having helped the Princess into her carriage, I quickly pressed her little hand to my lips. It was dark and no one could see.

I returned to the hall highly pleased with myself.

The young gallants were having supper around a large table, Grushnitsky among them. When I entered they all fell silent; they must have been talking about me. Ever since the previous ball many of them, the captain of dragoons in particular, have had a bone to pick with me, and now it seems that a hostile band is being organised against me under Grushnitsky's command. He wears such a cocky, bravura air.

I am very glad of it, for I love enemies, though not in the Christian way. They amuse me and quicken my pulse. To be always on one's guard, to catch every look and the significance of every word, to guess intentions, foil conspiracies, pretend to be deceived and then to overthrow with one blow the whole vast edifice of artifices and designs raised with so much effort—that is what I call life.

Throughout the meal Grushnitsky spoke in whispers and exchanged winks with the captain of dragoons.

June 6

This morning Vera left for Kislovodsk with her husband. Their carriage passed me as I was on my way to Princess Ligovskaya's. She nodded to me; there was a reproach in her eyes.

Who is to blame, after all? Why does she not want to give me an opportunity to see her alone? Love, like fire, dies out without fuel. Perhaps jealousy will succeed where my pleadings have failed.

I stayed a whole hour at the Princess'. Mary did not come down—she was indisposed. In the evening she did not appear on the boulevard. The newly-formed gang had armed itself with lorgnettes and looked formidable indeed. I am glad that the Princess was ill, for they would have affronted her in some way. Grushnitsky's hair was dishevelled, and he looked desperate; he actually seems to be embittered, his vanity especially has been wounded. But some people are really amusing even when desperate!

On returning home I felt a vague longing. *I had not seen her! She was ill!* Have I actually fallen in love? What nonsense!

June 7

At eleven o'clock in the morning, at which hour Princess Ligovskaya usually sweats it out at the Yermolov baths, I walked past her house. Princess Mary was sitting at the window lost in thought; on seeing me, she jumped to her feet.

I walked into the ante-room; there was no one around and, taking advantage of the freedom of the local custom, I went straight to the drawing-room without being announced.

A dull pallor had spread over the Princess' charming features. She stood by the piano, leaning with one arm on the back of a chair; the arm trembled slightly. Quietly I walked up to her and said:

"Are you angry with me?"

She raised her eyes to me with a deep, languorous look and shook her head; her lips wanted to say something, but could not; her eyes filled with tears; she sank into a chair and covered her face with her hands.

"What is the matter?" I said, taking her hand.

"You do not respect me! Oh, leave me alone!"

I stepped back a few paces. She stiffened in the chair and her eyes flashed....

I paused, my hand on the door knob, and said:

"I beg your pardon, Princess! I acted rashly ... it will not happen again, I shall see to it. Why should you know what has been going on in my heart? You shall never know it, which is all the better for you. Farewell."

As I went out I thought I heard her sobbing.

Until evening I wandered about the environs of Mashuk, tired myself out thoroughly and on returning home flung myself on the bed in utter exhaustion.

Werner dropped in to see me.

"Is it true," he asked, "that you intend to marry the young Princess Ligovskaya?"

"Why do you ask?"

"The whole town is talking about it. All my patients can think of nothing else but this important news, and these watering place crowds know everything!"

"This is Grushnitsky's little joke!" thought I.

"To prove to you, doctor, how unfounded these rumours are, I shall tell you in confidence that I am going to Kislovodsk tomorrow."

"And Princess Mary as well?"

"No, she will remain here another week."

"So you do not intend to marry?"

"Doctor, doctor! Look at me: do I look like a bridegroom or anything of the kind?"

"I am not saying you do.... But, you know, it sometimes happens," he added, smiling slyly, "that a man of honour is obliged to marry, and that there are fond mamas who at any rate do not prevent such eventualities from arising.... So as a friend, I advise you to be

more cautious. The air is highly dangerous here at the waters. How many splendid young men worthy of a better fate have I seen leave here bound straight for the altar. Believe it or not, they wanted to marry me off too. It was the doing of one provincial mama with a very pale daughter. I had the misfortune to tell her that the girl would regain her colour after marriage; whereupon with tears of gratitude in her eyes she offered me her daughter's hand and all her property—fifty souls, I believe it was. I told her, however, that I was quite unfit for matrimony.”

Werner left fully confident that he had given me a timely warning.

From what he had said I gathered that diverse malicious rumours had been spread all over town about the Princess and myself: Grushnitsky will have to pay for this!

June 10

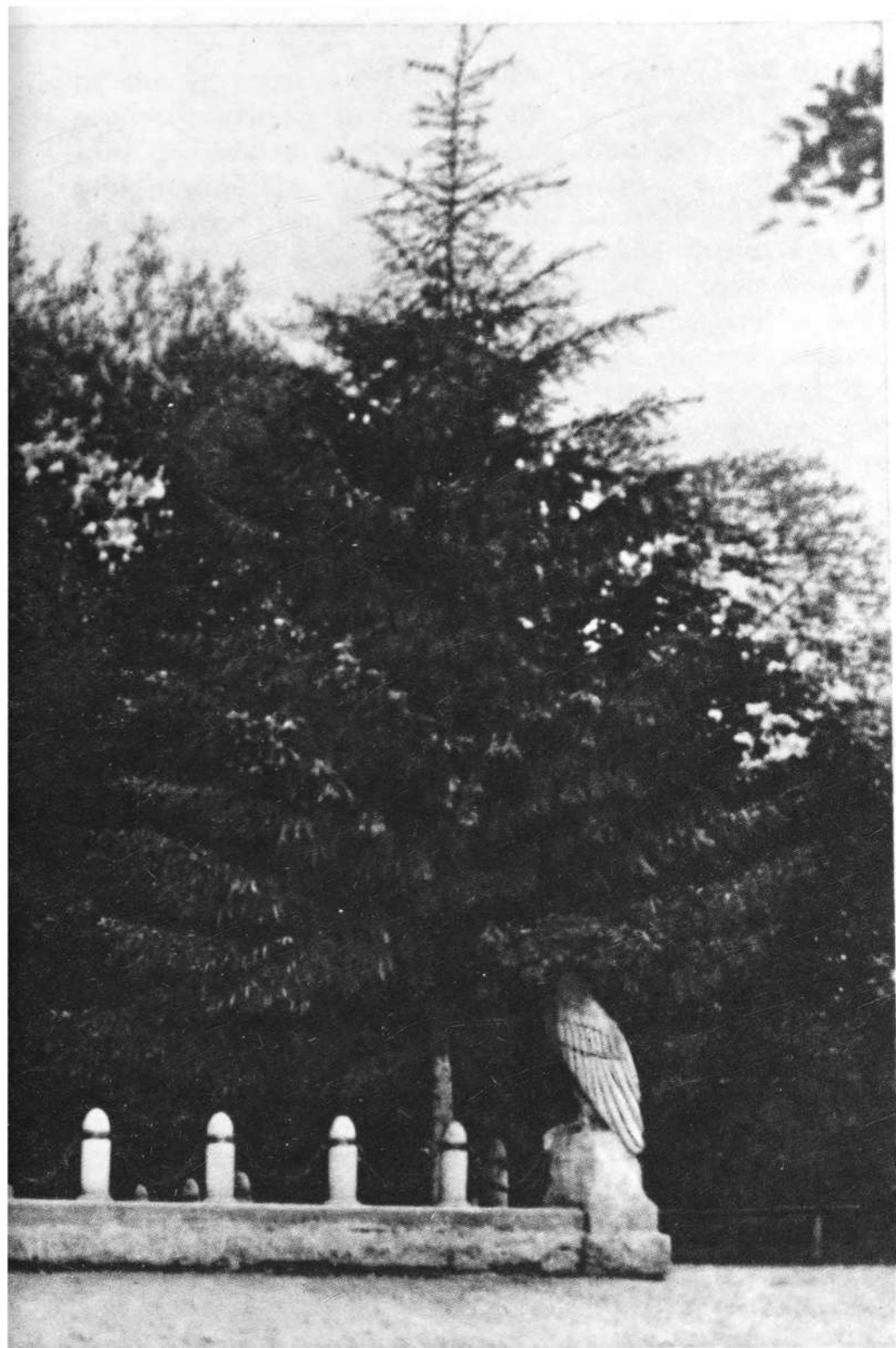
It is three days since I arrived in Kislovodsk. I see Vera every day at the spring or on the promenade. When I wake up in the morning I sit at the window and direct a lorgnette at her balcony. Having dressed long before, she waits for the signal agreed upon, and we meet as if by accident in the garden which slopes down to the spring from our houses. The invigorating mountain air has brought the colour back to her cheeks and given her strength. It is not for nothing that Narzan is called the spring of giants. The local inhabitants claim that the air in Kislovodsk is conducive to love and that all the love affairs that ever began at the foot of Mashuk have invariably reached their denouement here. And indeed, everything here breathes of seclusion; everything is mysterious—the dense shadows of the lime trees bordering the torrent which, falling noisily and frothily from flag to flag, cleaves its way through the green mountains, and the gorges, full of gloom and silence, that branch out from here in all directions, and the freshness



Lermontov in an army officer's uniform when he served in the Tenguin regiment. Gorbunov finished this watercolour portrait after the poet's death.



Memorial on the site of the duel at the foot of Mt. Mashuk, by Boris Mikeshin. 1915. In a niche on the obelisk there is a bronze bust of Lermontov.





A Memorial to Lermontov by Isaak Brodsky. Unveiled in 1965, in Lermontov Square in Moscow.

of the fragrant air laden with the aroma of the tall southern grasses and the white acacia, and the incessant deliciously drowsy babble of the cool brooks which, mingling at the end of the valley, rush onward to hurl their waters into the Podkumok. On this side the gorge is wider and spreads out into a green depression, and through it meanders a dusty road. Each time I look at it, I seem to see a carriage approaching and a pretty rosy-cheeked face looking out of its window. Many a carriage has already rolled along that road—but there still is no sign of that particular one. The settlement beyond the fort is now densely populated; from the restaurant built on a hill a few paces from my apartment lights have begun to glimmer in the evenings through the double row of poplars, and the noise and the clinking of glasses can be heard until late at night.

Nowhere is there so much Kakhetian wine and mineral water quaffed as here.

To jumble up such various kinds of fun

*There's many take delight: for me, I am not one.**

Grushnitsky and his gang carouse daily in the saloon. He barely greets me now.

He arrived only yesterday, but he has already managed to pick a quarrel with three old men who wanted to take their baths before him. Bad luck is decidedly developing a bellicose spirit in him.

June 11

At last they arrived. I was sitting at the window when I heard their carriage drive up, and my heart bounded. What does it mean? Could I be in love? So senselessly am I constituted that it might indeed be expected of me.

I had dinner with them. Princess Ligovskaya eyed me very tenderly and did not leave her daughter's side—a bad sign that! But Vera is jealous of Princess Mary;

* From Griboyedov's comedy *Wit Works Woe*.—Ed.

I have managed to achieve that felicitous state after all! What would not a woman do to hurt a rival! I recall a woman who loved me simply because I was in love with another. Nothing is more paradoxical than the feminine mind: it is hard to convince women of anything, they must be brought to a point where they will convince themselves. The method of adducing the evidence with which they annihilate their prejudices is highly original, and to come to know their dialectics one must rid the mind of all the academic rules of logic. For example, the ordinary method is this:

This man loves me; but I am married; hence, I must not love him.

The feminine method is this:

I must not love him because I am married; but he loves me, and hence....

Here follows a pregnant pause, for reason is now dumb, and all the talking is mainly done by the tongue, eyes, and eventually the heart, if there is one.

What if these notes fall into a woman's hands some day? "Slander!" she will cry indignantly.

Ever since poets began to write and women to read them (for which they must be heartily thanked), the latter have been called angels so often that in the simplicity of their hearts they have actually come to believe in this compliment, forgetting that for money the very same poets exalted Nero as a demigod.

It might appear unseemly that I should speak of them with such malice—I, who have never loved anything else under the sun, I, who have always been ready to sacrifice my peace of mind, ambition and life for their sake.... Yet it is not in a fit of annoyance or injured vanity that I endeavour to draw aside that magic veil which only the accustomed eye can penetrate. No, all that I say about them is only the result of

*The mind's reflections coldly noted,
The bitter insights of the heart.**

* From Pushkin's *Eugene Onegin*.—Ed.

Women should wish all men to know them as well as I do, for I have loved them a hundred times more since I overcame my fear of them and discovered their petty frailties.

Incidentally, Werner the other day compared women with the enchanted forest described by Tasso in his *Jerusalem Delivered*.

"You have but to approach it," he said, "to be assaulted from all sides by ungodly terrors: duty, pride, respectability, public opinion, ridicule, contempt.... You must not heed them, but go straight on; little by little the monsters vanish and before you opens a quiet, sunny glade with green myrtle blooming in its midst. But woe to you if your heart quails when you take those first steps and you turn back!"

June 12

This evening was replete with events. Some three versts out of Kislovodsk, in the gorge where the Podkumok flows, there is a crag called *The Ring*, forming a natural gateway that towers above a high hill; through it the setting sun casts its last fiery glance at the world. A large cavalcade set out to watch the sunset through the rocky window. To tell the truth, though, none of us thought of the sunset. I rode next to Princess Mary. On the way back we had to ford the Podkumok. Even the shallowest mountain streams are dangerous chiefly because their beds are a perfect kaleidoscope, changing day after day under the action of the current; where there was a rock yesterday there may be a pit today. I took the Princess' horse by the bridle and led it to the water, which did not rise above the knees; we started crossing slowly at an angle against the current. It is a well-known fact that in crossing rapids one should not look at the water because it makes you dizzy. I forgot to warn Princess Mary of this.

We were already in midstream, where the current is

the swiftest, when she suddenly began to sway in the saddle. "I feel faint!" she gasped. Quickly I bent over toward her and put my arm around her supple waist.

"Look up!" I whispered to her. "Don't be afraid, it's quite all right; I am with you."

She felt better and wanted to free herself from my arm, but I tightened my embrace about her soft slender waist; my cheek almost touched hers; I could feel the fiery glow of her.

"What are you doing? My God!"

I paid no heed to her quivering confusion, and my lips touched her soft cheek; she started, but said nothing. We were riding behind the others; no one saw us. When we clambered ashore, everyone set off at a trot. The Princess, however, reined in her horse, and I remained with her; it was obvious that she was worried by my silence, but I swore to myself not to say a word—out of sheer curiosity. I wanted to see how she would extricate herself from the embarrassing situation.

"Either you despise me or you love me very much," she said at last in a voice that shook with tears. "Perhaps you wish to mock at me, play on my feelings, and then leave me.... That would be so vile, so low, that the very thought.... Oh no! Surely," she added with an air of tender trustfulness, "there is nothing in me that would preclude respect, is there? Your presumptuous conduct.... I must, I must forgive you because I suffered it.... Answer me, speak to me, I want to hear your voice!" There was so much womanly impetuosity in her last words that I could not suppress a smile; luckily, it was growing dark. I did not reply.

"You have nothing to say?" she continued. "Perhaps you wish me to be the first to say that I love you?"

I was silent.

"Do you want me to do that?" she went on, swiftly turning toward me. There was something awe-inspiring in the earnestness of her eyes and voice.

"Why should I?" I replied, shrugging my shoulders.

She struck her horse with her riding crop and set off

at full gallop along the narrow, dangerous road; it all happened so quickly that I was hardly able to overtake her, and did so only when she had already joined the rest of the company. All the way home she talked and laughed incessantly. There was a feverishness in her movements; and not once did she look at me. Everybody noticed this unusual gaiety. Princess Ligovskaya rejoiced inwardly as she watched her daughter; but her daughter was merely suffering a fit of nerves and would spend a sleepless night weeping. The very thought gives me infinite pleasure; there are moments when I understand the Vampire. . . . And yet I have the reputation of being a good fellow and try to live up to it!

Having dismounted, the ladies went in to Princess Ligovskaya's. I was agitated and galloped into the hills to dispel the thoughts that crowded into my mind. The dewy evening breathed a delicious coolness. The moon was rising from behind the darkly looming mountain pinnacles. Every step my unshod horse took echoed dully in the silence of the gorges. I watered my horse at a waterfall, eagerly drank in the invigorating air of the southern night, and retraced my steps. I rode through the settlement. Lights were going out in the windows; sentries on the ramparts of the fort and Cossack pickets on the outposts hallooed to each other on a sustained note.

I noticed that one of the houses in the village which had been built on the brink of a gully was unusually brightly lit, and every now and then I could hear a babble of voices and shouting which betokened an army-men's carousal. I dismounted and crept up to the window; a loose shutter made it possible for me to see the revellers and overhear what they were saying. They were talking about me.

The captain of dragoons, flushed with wine, pounded the table with his fist to command attention.

"Gentlemen!" he said. "This won't do at all. Pechorin must be taught a lesson. These Petersburg whippersnappers get uppish until they're rapped on the knuck-

les! Just because he always wears clean gloves and shiny boots he thinks he's the only society man around."

"And that supercilious smile of his! Yet I'm certain he's a coward—yes, a coward!"

"I believe so too," said Grushnitsky. "He turns everything into a joke. Once I told him off in such terms that another man would have cut me down on the spot, but Pechorin just laughed it off. I, of course, didn't challenge him, because it was up to him to do so; besides I did not want to bother...."

"Grushnitsky is wild because he stole a march on him with the Princess," said someone.

"What nonsense! True, I did run after the Princess a bit, but I gave it up soon enough because I have no desire to marry and I do not believe in compromising a girl."

"Yes, I assure you he is a coward of the first water—Pechorin, I mean, not Grushnitsky. Grushnitsky is a fine chap and a good friend of mine to boot!" said the captain of dragoons. "Gentlemen! Does anyone here want to stand up for him? No one? All the better! Do you wish to test his courage? It will be amusing...."

"We do. But how?"

"Now listen to me: since Grushnitsky's grievance is the biggest, his shall be the leading role. He will take exception to some trifle and challenge Pechorin to a duel.... Wait, this is the point.... He will challenge Pechorin—so far so good! Everything, the challenge, the preparations and the conditions will be made in as solemn and awe-inspiring a fashion as possible—I shall take care of that, for I'll be your second, my poor friend! Very well! Now this is the trick: we will not load the pistols. I give you my word, Pechorin will show the white feather—six paces from one another I'll pace them, damn it! Are you agreeable, gentlemen?"

"Grand idea, splendid! What a lark!" came from all sides.

"And you, Grushnitsky?"

I awaited Grushnitsky's reply with trepidation; a cold

fury gripped me at the thought that mere chance had saved me from being made the butt of these fools' jest. Had Grushnitsky not agreed to it, I would have flung myself on his neck. After a brief silence, however, he rose from his seat, extended his hand to the captain and said very pompously: "Very well, I agree."

The elation of the whole honourable company defies description.

I returned home a prey to two conflicting emotions. One was sadness. Why do they all hate me? I thought. Why? Had I offended anybody? No. Can it be that I am one of those whose mere appearance excites ill will? And I felt a venomous wrath gradually take possession of me. Take care, Mr. Grushnitsky, I said to myself as I paced up and down the room, you cannot trifle thus with me. You might have to pay dearly for the approbation of your stupid comrades. I am not a toy for you to play with!...

I lay awake all night. In the morning I looked as yellow as an orange.

Early in the day I met Princess Mary at the spring.

"Are you ill?" she asked, looking at me intently.

"I did not sleep all night."

"Neither did I.... I blamed you ... unjustly perhaps? But if you would only explain, I could forgive you everything."

"Everything?"

"Yes, everything.... Only you must tell the truth ... be quick.... You see, I have gone over it again and again, trying to find some explanation that would justify your conduct. Perhaps you fear opposition on the part of my relatives? You don't have to worry about that; when they hear of it ... (her voice trembled) I shall persuade them. Or perhaps it is your own position... but I want you to know that I am capable of sacrificing everything for the sake of the man I love.... Oh, answer me quickly—have pity on me.... Tell me, you don't despise me, do you?"

She seized my hand.

Princess Ligovskaya was walking ahead of us with Vera's husband and saw nothing; but we could have been observed by the patients who were strolling about, and they are the most inquisitive of all inquisitive gossips, so I quickly disengaged my hand from her passionate clasp.

"I shall tell you the whole truth," I said, "without trying to justify myself or to explain my actions. I do not love you."

Her lips paled slightly.

"Leave me," she said in a barely audible voice.

I shrugged my shoulders, turned, and walked away.

June 14

Sometimes I despise myself; is that why I despise others too? I am no longer capable of noble impulses; I am afraid of appearing ridiculous to myself. Another in my place would have offered the Princess *son coeur et sa fortune* but for me the word *marriage* has an odd spell: no matter how passionately I might love a woman it is farewell to love if she as much as hints at my marrying her. My heart turns to stone, and nothing can warm it again. I would make any sacrifice but this; twenty times I can stake my life, even my honour, but my freedom I shall never sell. Why do I prize it so much? What do I find in it? What am I aiming at? What have I to expect from the future? Nothing, absolutely nothing. It is some innate fear, an inexplicable foreboding.... After all, some people have an unreasoning fear of spiders, cockroaches, mice.... Shall I confess? When I was still a child, some old woman told my fortune for my mother, predicting that I would *die through a wicked wife*. It made a deep impression on me at the time, and an insuperable abhorrence for marriage grew within me. And yet something tells me that her prophecy will come true; but at least I shall do my best to put off its fulfillment as long as possible.

June 15

Apfelbaum, the conjurer, arrived here yesterday. A long poster appeared on the restaurant doors informing the worthy public that the abovenamed amazing magician, acrobat, chemist and optician would have the honour to present a magnificent spectacle this day at eight o'clock in the evening in the hall of the Nobles' Club (in other words, the restaurant); admission two rubles and a half.

Everybody intends to go and see the amazing conjurer; even Princess Ligovskaya has taken a ticket for herself, although her daughter is ill.

As I was walking past Vera's windows today after dinner—she was sitting on the balcony alone—a note fell at my feet:

"Come tonight at ten o'clock in the evening by the main staircase; my husband has gone to Pyatigorsk and will not be back until tomorrow morning. My menservants and chambermaids will not be in: I gave them all, as well as the Princess' servants, tickets to the show. I shall wait for you; come without fail."

"Aha!" thought I. "At last I am having my way."

At eight o'clock I went to see the conjurer. It was nearly nine when the audience had assembled and the performance began. In the back rows I recognised the lackeys and chambermaids of both Vera and the Princess. They were all accounted for. Grushnitsky was sitting in the first row with his lorgnette. The conjurer turned to him each time he needed a handkerchief, watch, ring or the like.

Grushnitsky has not bowed to me for some time, and now he eyed me rather insolently once or twice. He shall rue it when the time comes to settle scores.

It was nearly ten when I rose and went out.

It was pitch-dark outside. Heavy, chill clouds lay on the summits of the surrounding mountains, and only now and then did the dying breeze rustle the tops of the poplars around the restaurant. People were crowd-

ing at the windows. I went down the hill and, after turning into the gate, quickened my pace. Suddenly I felt that someone was following me. I stopped and looked around. It was too dark to see anything, but for the sake of caution I walked around the house as if merely out for a stroll. As I passed Princess Mary's windows I again heard footsteps behind me, and a man wrapped in a greatcoat ran past me. This worried me; nevertheless I crept up to the porch and hurried up the dark staircase. The door opened a little hand seized mine. . . .

"No one saw you?" Vera whispered, clinging to me.

"No!"

"Now do you believe that I love you! Oh, I have hesitated so long, tormented myself so long . . . but I am as clay in your hands."

Her heart pounded, and her hands were cold as ice. Then followed reproaches and jealous recriminations—she demanding a full confession, vowing she would meekly endure my faithlessness, for her only desire was to see me happy. I did not quite believe that but nevertheless reassured her with vows, promises, and so on.

"So you are not going to marry Mary? You don't love her? And she thinks . . . do you know she is madly in love with you, the poor thing! . . ."

.

At about two o'clock in the morning I opened the window and, knotting two shawls together, let myself down from the upper balcony to the lower, holding on to a column as I did so. A light was still burning in Princess Mary's room. Something impelled me toward that window. The curtains were not drawn tight and I was able to cast a curious glance into the interior of the room. Mary was sitting on her bed, her hands crossed on her knees; her abundant tresses had been gathered under a lace night cap; a large scarlet shawl covered her white shoulders. and her tiny feet were concealed

in a pair of brightly coloured Persian slippers. She sat motionless, her head sunk on her breast; on a table before her lay an open book, but her fixed gaze, full of inexpressible sadness, seemed to be skimming one and the same page for the hundredth time while her thoughts were far away. . . .

Just then someone moved behind a bush, I jumped down to the lawn from the balcony. An invisible hand seized me by the shoulder. "Aha!" said a gruff voice. "Got you! I'll teach you to go prowling in princesses' rooms at night!"

"Hold him fast!" yelled another, leaping from behind the corner.

They were Grushnitsky and the captain of dragoons.

I struck the latter on the head with my fist, knocking him down, and ran for the bushes. I knew all the paths in the garden covering the slope opposite our houses.

"Thieves! Help!" they shouted; a shot was fired; the glowing wad fell almost at my feet.

A minute later I was in my own room, undressed and in bed. My man-servant had scarcely locked the door when Grushnitsky and the captain began pounding on it.

"Pechorin! Are you asleep? Are you there?" the captain shouted.

"I'm in bed," I replied testily.

"Get up! Thieves! The Cherkess!"

"I have a cold," I replied, "I'm afraid of aggravating it."

They went away. I should not have answered them; they would have spent another hour searching for me in the garden. In the meantime a fearful hue and cry was raised. A Cossack galloped down from the fort. All was astir; Cherkess were being hunted for in every bush, but of course, none were found. Many people, however, probably remained firmly convinced that had the garrison displayed greater courage and speed at least a dozen or two marauders would have been left on the spot.

June 16

The Cherkess night raid was the sole subject of conversation at the spring this morning. Having imbibed the prescribed number of glasses of Narzan and walked some ten times up and down the long linden avenue, I met Vera's husband, who had just returned from Pyatigorsk. He took my arm and we went into the restaurant for breakfast. He was exceedingly worried about his wife. "She had a terrible fright last night!" he said. "A thing like this would have to happen just when I was away!" We sat down for breakfast near the door leading to the corner room which was occupied by a dozen gallants, Grushnitsky among them. And for the second time Providence offered me an opportunity to overhear a conversation that was to decide his fate. He did not see me, and hence I could not conclude that he was talking deliberately for my benefit; but that only enhanced his guilt in my eyes.

"Could it really have been the Cherkess?" said someone. "Did anyone see them?"

"I'll tell you the whole truth," replied Grushnitsky, "only I ask you not to give me away. This is what happened: last night a man, whose name I shall not mention, came to me with the story that he had seen someone sneaking into the Ligovsky house at about ten at night. Let me remind you that Princess Ligovskaya was here at the time, and Princess Mary at home. So I set out with him to lay in wait for the lucky fellow under her window."

I admit I was alarmed lest my companion, engrossed though he was with his breakfast, should hear some rather unpleasant things if Grushnitsky had guessed the truth. Blinded by jealousy, however, the latter did not even suspect what had happened.

"So you see," Grushnitsky continued, "we set off taking along a gun loaded with a blank charge in order to give the fellow a fright. Until two o'clock we waited in the garden. Finally he appeared, the Lord knows from

where, only it wasn't through the window because it did not open—he probably came through the glass door hidden behind a column—finally, I say, we saw somebody climbing off the balcony.... What do you think of the Princess, eh? I must admit these Moscow ladies are beyond me! What can you believe in after this? We tried to seize him, but he broke loose and scurried for the bushes like a hare; that's when I shot at him."

A murmur of incredulity broke out around Grushnitsky.

"You do not believe me?" he continued. "I give you my word of honour that this is the downright truth, and to prove it, perhaps I shall mention the name of the gentleman in question."

"Who was it, who was it?" came from all sides.

"Pechorin," replied Grushnitsky.

At that moment he raised his eyes—to see me standing in the doorway facing him; he flushed scarlet. I stepped up to him and said very slowly and distinctly:

"I am very sorry that I entered after you had already given your word of honour in confirmation of the most abominable piece of slander. My presence might have saved you from that added villainy."

Grushnitsky leapt to his feet, all ready to flare up.

"I beg of you," I continued in the same tone of voice, "I beg of you to retract at once what you have said; you are very well aware that it is a lie. I do not believe that the indifference of a woman to your brilliant qualities deserves such severe retaliation. Think it over well: if you persist in your opinion, you forfeit your right to a reputation of a man of honour and risk your life."

Grushnitsky stood before me, eyes downcast, in violent agitation. But the struggle between conscience and vanity was brief. The captain of dragoons, who was sitting next to him, nudged him with his elbow; he started and quickly replied to me without raising his eyes:

"My dear sir, when I say something, I mean it, and am ready to repeat it.... Your threats do not intimidate me and I will stick at nothing."

"The last you have already proved," I replied coldly, and taking the arm of the captain of dragoons, led him out of the room.

"What do you wish with me?" asked the captain.

"You are a friend of Grushnitsky's and will probably be his second?"

The captain bowed with much hauteur.

"You have guessed right," he replied. "Moreover, I am obliged to be his second, for the insult you have offered him concerns me too. . . . I was with him last night," he added, squaring his stooping shoulders.

"Ah, so it was you I hit so clumsily on the head?"

He went yellow, then blue; suppressed anger showed on his face.

"I shall have the honour to send my second to you shortly," I added, bowing very politely and pretending to ignore his fury.

On the steps of the restaurant I met Vera's husband. He had evidently been waiting for me.

He seized hold of my hand with something akin to rapture.

"Noble-minded young man!" he said with tears in his eyes. "I heard everything. What a scoundrel! The ingrate! Just think of admitting them into a respectable home after this! Thank God I have no daughters! But she for whom you are risking your life will reward you. You may be assured of my discretion for the time being," he continued. "I was young once myself and served in the army; I know one must not interfere in affairs like this. Good-bye!"

Poor fellow! He is glad that he has no daughters. . . .

I went straight to Werner, whom I found at home, and told him everything—my relations with Vera and the Princess and the conversation I had overheard which apprised me of these gentlemen's intentions to make a fool of me by having us shoot it out with blank charges. Now, however, the affair had overstepped the bounds of a joke; they probably had not expected it to end like this.

The doctor agreed to act as my second. I gave him a

few instructions concerning the conditions of the duel; he was to insist on the greatest secrecy, for, though I am always ready to risk my life, I am not disposed in the slightest to spoil my future in this world for all time to come.

Afterwards I went home. An hour later the doctor returned from his expedition.

"There is indeed a conspiracy against you," he said. "I found the captain of dragoons and another gentleman whose name I do not remember at Grushnitsky's. I stopped for a moment in the hallway to take off my galoshes; inside there was a terrific noise and argument going on. 'I will not agree on any account!' Grushnitsky was saying. 'He insulted me publicly; at that time it was an entirely different matter. . . .' 'Why should it concern you?' replied the captain. 'I am taking everything upon myself. I have been a second in five duels and know how these things are arranged. I have thought it out in every detail. Only be so good as not to interfere with me. It will do good to give him a fright. But why should you run a risk if you can avoid it?' At that point I walked in. They immediately fell silent. Our parleys lasted for quite a while, and finally we came to the following arrangement: about five versts from here there is a lonely gorge; they will go there tomorrow morning at four o'clock, and we are to leave half an hour later. You will fire at six paces—Grushnitsky insisted on that distance himself. The dead man is to be credited to the Cherkess. Now I will tell you what I suspect: they, the seconds, I mean, have apparently amended the earlier scheme somewhat and want to put a bullet only into Grushnitsky's pistol. It looks rather like murder, but cunning is permitted in wartime, particularly in an Asiatic war. I daresay though that Grushnitsky is slightly better than his comrades. What do you think? Should we let them know that we have guessed their stratagem?"

"Not for anything in the world, doctor! You can rest assured I shall not give in to them."

"What do you intend to do?"

"That is my secret."

"Take care you do not fall into the trap.... Remember the distance is only six paces!"

"Doctor, I shall expect you tomorrow at four. The horses will be saddled. Good-bye!"

I sat at home until evening, locked up in my room. A footman came with an invitation from Princess Ligovskaya, but I said I was ill.

.....
It is two o'clock in the morning, but I cannot fall asleep. I know I should rest, so that my hand should be steady tomorrow. It will be hard to miss at six paces though. Ah, Mr. Grushnitsky, your hoax will not succeed! We shall exchange roles, and now it will be for me to look for signs of secret terror on your pallid face. Why did you insist on these fatal six paces? You think that I shall submissively offer you my brow as a target... but we shall draw lots! And then... then... but what if fortune smiles on him? What if my star fails me at last? And little wonder if it did; there is no more constancy in the heavens than on earth.

Ah, well! If I must die, I must! The world will lose little, and I am weary enough of it all. I am like a man who yawns at a ball and does not go home to sleep only because his carriage has not come. But the carriage is here—good-bye!

I run through my past life in my mind and involuntarily ask myself: Why have I lived? For what purpose was I born? I daresay there was a purpose, and I dare-say fate had something noble in store for me, for I am conscious of untapped powers within me.... But I did not divine my predestination, I allowed myself to be carried away by the temptation of vain passions; I emerged from their crucible hard and cold like iron, but gone forever was the ardour of noble aspirations—life's finest flower. How often since then have I played the role of an axe in the hands of fate! Like that instrument of punishment I have fallen upon the heads of the condemned, often without malice, always without regret....

My love has never made anyone happy, for I have never sacrificed anything for those I loved; I have loved only for myself, for my own pleasure; I have striven only to satisfy a strange craving of the heart, greedily absorbing their emotions, their tenderness, their joys and sufferings—and have never been sated. I have been like the starving man who falls into a stupor from sheer exhaustion and dreams of luxurious viands and sparkling wines; exultingly he gorges himself on these ephemeral gifts of the imagination, and seems to feel better; but when he awakes the vision is gone . . . and redoubled hunger and despair remain!

Perhaps I shall die tomorrow, and there will not be a creature left on earth who understands me fully. Some think of me worse, others better, than I really am. Some will say: he was a good fellow; others: he was a scoundrel. And both will be wrong. Is it worth the trouble to live after this? And yet you go on living—out of curiosity, in expectation of something new . . . How ludicrous and how vexatious!

A month and a half has passed since I arrived at the fort of *N. Maxim Maximych* has gone out hunting . . . I am all alone. I am sitting at the window; outside the grey clouds have concealed the mountains to their very base; the sun looks like a yellow blotch through the mist. It is cold; the wind is sighing and rattling the shutters . . . How wearisome it all is! I shall resume writing my journal which has been interrupted by so many strange events.

Reading over the last page, it strikes me as amusing. I thought I would die, but that was out of the question, for I had not drained my cup of misery to the dregs, and now I feel that I still have long to live.

How clearly and sharply everything that has happened is imprinted in my memory! Time has not obliterated a single line or shade.

I recall that on the night before the duel I did not sleep a wink. A mysterious disquietude seized me and I could

not write for long. For about an hour I paced the room; then I sat down and opened a novel by Walter Scott that had lain on my table: it was *Old Mortality*. At first I read with an effort, then, carried away by the enchanting fiction, I was soon oblivious to everything. Surely, the Scottish bard is rewarded in heaven for every joyous minute his book presents to the reader. . . .

At last day broke. My nerves had grown calm. I examined my face in the mirror: a dull pallor had spread over my features which still showed traces of a racking sleepless night, but my eyes, though encircled by dark shadows, shone proudly and remorselessly. I was satisfied with myself.

Ordering the horses to be saddled, I dressed and hurried to the baths. As I immersed myself in the cold Narzan water, I felt my physical and spiritual strength returning. I left the baths as refreshed and vigorous as if about to attend a ball. After this no one can tell me that the soul is not dependent on the body!

On returning home I found the doctor there. He was wearing grey riding breeches, a light jacket gathered in at the waist and a Cherkess cap. I burst out laughing at the sight of his slight frame beneath the enormous shaggy cap. His countenance is anything but warlike, and this time he looked more dejected than usual.

"Why so sad, doctor?" I said to him. "Haven't you seen people off to the next world a hundred times with the greatest indifference? Imagine that I have a bilious fever, and that I have equal chances of recovering or succumbing; both eventualities are in the order of things; try to regard me as a patient stricken with a disease you have not yet diagnosed—that will stimulate your curiosity to the utmost. You may now make some important physiological observations on me. . . . Is not expectation of death by violence a real illness in itself?"

This thought impressed the doctor and his spirits rose.

We mounted. Werner clung to the reins with both hands and we set off. In a flash we had galloped through the settlement and past the fort and entered the gorge

through which a road wound its way. It was half overgrown with tall grass and intersected at short intervals by noisy brooks which we had to ford, much to the despair of the doctor, whose horse would halt each time in the water.

I cannot remember a morning bluer or fresher. The sun had barely peeped over the green summits and the merging of the first warmth of its rays with the dying coolness of the night brought a sweet languor to the senses. The exultant ray of the new day had not yet penetrated into the gorge; now it gilded only the tops of the crags that towered above us on both sides. The dense foliage of the bushes growing in the deep crevices of the cliffs showered a silvery rain upon us at the slightest breath of wind. I remember that at that moment I loved nature as never before. With what curiosity did I gaze at each dewdrop that trembled on the broad vine leaves, reflecting millions of rainbow rays! How eagerly my eyes sought to pierce the hazy distance! There the path grew narrower and narrower, the crags bluer and more awesome, seeming to merge at last into an impregnable wall. We rode along in silence.

"Have you made your will?" Werner asked all of a sudden.

"No."

"What if you are killed?"

"The heirs will turn up themselves."

"Have you no friends you would wish to send your last farewell?"

I shook my head.

"Is there no woman in the world to whom you would want to leave a remembrance?"

"Do you want me to lay bare my soul to you, doctor?" I replied. "You see, I am past the age when people die with the names of their beloved on their lips and bequeath a lock of pomaded, or unpomaded, hair to a friend. When I think of imminent and possible death, I think only of myself; some do not even do that. Friends, who will forget me tomorrow, or, worse still, who will weave God

knows what fantastic yarns about me, and women, who in the embrace of another will laugh at me in order that he might not be jealous of the departed—what do I care for them? From life's turmoil I have drawn a few ideas, but no feeling. For a long time now I have been living by my reason, not my heart. I weigh and analyse my own emotions and actions with stern curiosity, but without sympathy. There are two men in me; one lives in the full sense of the word, the other reasons and passes judgment on the first. The first will perhaps take leave of you and the world forever in an hour now, and the second . . . the second? Look, doctor, do you see the three dark figures on the cliff to the right? I believe they are our adversaries."

We spurred our horses on.

Three horses were picketed in the bushes at the foot of the cliff. We tethered ours there too and continued on foot up a narrow path to a ledge where Grushnitsky was waiting for us with the captain of dragoons and another second by the name of Ivan Ignatyevich; his surname I had never heard.

"We have been waiting a long time for you," said the captain of dragoons, with an ironical smile.

I pulled out my watch and showed it to him.

He apologised, saying that his watch was fast.

For several minutes there was an awkward silence. At last the doctor broke it, turning to Grushnitsky:

"I believe," he said, "that having both shown your readiness to fight and thereby duly discharged your debt of honour, you might, gentlemen, come to an understanding and end this affair amicably."

"I am ready to do so," said I.

The captain winked at Grushnitsky, who, thinking that I was showing the white feather, assumed a haughty air, although his face had been sickly grey until that moment. Now for the first time since our arrival he looked at me; the glance was uneasy and betrayed his inner conflict.

"Tell me your conditions," he said, "and you may rest assured that I shall do all I can for you. . . ."

"These are my conditions: you will today publicly retract your calumny and apologise to me. . . ."

"My dear sir, I am amazed that you dare suggest anything of the kind. . . ."

"What else could I suggest?"

"We shall shoot it out."

I shrugged my shoulders.

"So be it; only remember that one of us is bound to be killed."

"I hope it will be you."

"I am quite certain of the contrary."

He started and flushed red, and then he forced a laugh.

The captain took him by the arm and led him aside; they spoke in whispers at some length. I had arrived quite peaceably disposed, but now these proceedings were getting on my nerves.

The doctor came up to me.

"Look here," he said, obviously worried, "have you forgotten about their conspiracy? I do not know how to load a pistol, but if that is the case. . . . You are a queer man! Tell them you are aware of their intentions, and they will not dare. . . . Where's the sense of it? They will shoot you down like a fowl. . . ."

"Please, doctor, do not alarm yourself, and wait a little. . . . I shall handle it so that they will not have any advantage. Let them whisper. . . ."

"Gentlemen, this is becoming tiresome!" I said to them in a loud voice. "If we are to fight, let us do so; you had time enough yesterday to talk it over. . . ."

"We are ready," replied the captain. "Take your places, gentlemen! Doctor, will you measure off six paces?"

"Take your places!" repeated Ivan Ignatyevich in a squeaky voice.

"I beg your pardon!" I said. "There is one more condition. Inasmuch as we intend to fight to the death, we are obliged to take every precaution that this encounter should remain a secret and that our seconds should bear no responsibility. Do you agree?"

"We agree fully."

"This is what has occurred to me. Do you see the narrow ledge on top of that sheer cliff to the right? The drop from there to the bottom is a good thirty sagues, if not more; down below there are jagged rocks. Each of us will take his position on the very edge of the shelf, which will make even a slight wound mortal; that should coincide with your wishes since you yourselves set the distance at six paces. If one of us is wounded he will inevitably go over and be dashed to pieces; the doctor will remove the bullet, and the sudden death can easily be explained as an accident. We shall draw lots to see who is to shoot first. In conclusion I wish to make it clear that I shall fight on no other terms."

"Let it be so!" said the captain after a meaningful look at Grushnitsky, who nodded his concurrence. His facial expression changed every moment. I had placed him in a difficult position. Under ordinary conditions, he could have aimed at my leg and wounded me lightly, thus getting his revenge without laying too heavy a burden on his conscience. Now, however, he either had to fire into the air or become a murderer, or, finally, abandon his dastardly scheme and run the same risk as I. I would not have wished to be in his boots at that moment. He led the captain aside and began to talk to him very heatedly; I noticed how his lips, now turned bluish, quivered. The captain, however, turned away from him with a contemptuous smile. "You are a fool!" he said to Grushnitsky rather loudly. "You don't understand anything. Let us go, gentlemen!"

A narrow path winding between the bushes led up the steep incline; broken fragments of rock formed the precarious steps of this natural staircase; clutching at the bushes, we began climbing. Grushnitsky went ahead, followed by his seconds, and the doctor and I came last.

"You amaze me," said the doctor, clasping my hand warmly. "Let me feel your pulse. Oho, it's pounding feverishly! But your face betrays nothing; only your eyes shine brighter than usual."

Suddenly small stones rolled noisily down to our feet. What had happened? Grushnitsky had stumbled; the branch he had been holding snapped and he would have fallen backwards had his seconds not supported him.

"Take care!" I called out to him. "Don't fall too soon; it's an ill omen. Remember Julius Caesar!"

Finally we reached the top of the projecting cliff. The ledge was covered with fine sand as if specially spread there for the duel. All around, wrapped in the golden mist of morning, the mountain peaks clustered like a numberless herd, while in the south Elbrus loomed white, bringing up the rear of a chain of icy summits among which roamed the feathery clouds blown in from the east. I walked to the brink of the ledge and looked down; my head nearly swam. Down below it was dark and cold as in a grave, and the moss-grown jagged rocks hurled down by storm and time awaited their prey.

The ledge on which we were to fight described an almost regular triangle. Six paces were measured off from the projecting angle, and it was decided that he who would first have to face his opponent's fire should stand at the very edge with his back to the abyss; if he was not killed, the adversaries were to change places.

I decided to give Grushnitsky every advantage, for I wanted to try him; a spark of generosity might have been awakened in his soul, in which case everything would have turned out for the best; but vanity and weakness of character were bound to triumph.... I wanted to give myself full justification for allowing him to quarter if fate spared me. Who has not thus struck a bargain with his conscience?

"Cast the lots, doctor!" said the captain.

The doctor produced a silver coin from his pocket and held it aloft.

"Tails!" cried Grushnitsky suddenly, like a man just awakened by a friendly nudge.

"Heads!" said I.

The coin rose into the air and came down with a clink; we all rushed over to look at it.

"You're lucky," I said to Grushnitsky, "you are to shoot first. But remember, if you do not kill me, I shall not miss—I give you my word of honour."

He flushed; the thought of killing an unarmed man filled him with shame. I looked at him intently, and for a moment I thought he would throw himself at my feet and beg my forgiveness; but how could he confess to a scheme so vile? One way out remained for him: to fire into the air; I was certain he would fire into the air! Only one thing might prevent him from doing so: the thought that I might demand a second duel.

"It's time now!" the doctor whispered to me, tugging at my sleeve. "If you will not tell them now that we know their intention all will be lost. See, he is loading already. If you will not, I shall tell them. . . ."

"Certainly not, doctor!" I replied, holding him by the arm. "You will spoil everything; you gave me your word you would not interfere. . . . And why should it concern you? Perhaps I want to be killed."

He looked at me in amazement.

"Oh, that's another matter! Only don't blame me in the other world. . . ."

Meanwhile the captain had loaded his pistols. One he gave Grushnitsky, smilingly whispering something to him, the other to me.

I took my place at the far corner of the ledge, firmly bracing my left foot against the rock and leaning slightly forward so as not to fall backwards in case I was lightly wounded.

Grushnitsky took his place opposite me, and when the signal was given, started to raise the pistol. His knees shook. He aimed straight at my forehead. . . .

Savage anger welled up in my heart.

Suddenly he lowered the muzzle of his pistol and going as white as a sheet turned to his second.

"I cannot do it," he said hoarsely.

"Coward!" replied the captain.

The shot rang out. The bullet scratched my knee.

Involuntarily I took a few steps forward to get away from the brink as quickly as possible.

"Well, brother Grushnitsky, it is a pity you missed!" said the captain. "Now it's your turn, take your place! Embrace me before you go, for we shall meet no more!" They embraced, the captain scarcely able to restrain himself from laughter. "Don't be afraid," he added, with a sly look at Grushnitsky, "everything in the world's a pack of nonsense! Nature, fate, life itself all are but worthless pelf!"

This tragic utterance made with due solemnity, the captain withdrew to his place. With tears in his eyes, Ivan Ignatyevich also embraced Grushnitsky, and now the latter remained alone facing me. To this day I have tried to explain to myself the emotion that then surged in my breast: it was the vexation of injured vanity, and contempt, and wrath born of the realisation that this man who was now eyeing me so coolly, with such calm insolence, two minutes before had sought to kill me like a dog without endangering himself in the slightest, for had I been wounded a little more severely in the leg I would certainly have toppled over the cliff.

I looked him squarely in the face for a few minutes, trying to detect the slightest sign of repentance. Instead I thought I saw him suppressing a smile.

"I advise you to say your prayers before you die," I told him then.

"You need not be more concerned about my soul than your own. I only beg of you to fire with the least delay."

"And you will not retract your slander? Or apologise to me? Think well, has your conscience nothing to say to you?"

"Mr. Pechorin!" shouted the captain of dragoons. "You are not here to preach, allow me to observe. . . . Let us get it over and done with as quickly as possible. Someone might ride through the gorge and see us."

"Very well. Doctor, will you come to me?"

The doctor came over. Poor doctor! He was paler than Grushnitsky had been ten minutes before.

I spoke the following words with deliberation, loudly and distinctly, as sentences of death are pronounced:

"Doctor, these gentlemen, no doubt in their haste, forgot to put a bullet into my pistol; I beg you to reload it—and well!"

"It can't be!" cried the captain. "It can't be! I loaded both pistols; the bullet may have rolled out of yours. . . . That's not my fault! And you have no right to reload . . . no right whatsoever . . . it is most decidedly against the rules. I shall not allow it. . . ."

"Good!" I said to the captain. "If so, you and I shall shoot it out on the same terms. . . ."

He did not know what to say.

Grushnitsky stood there, head sunk on his breast, embarrassed and gloomy.

"Let them do as they wish!" he finally told the captain, who was trying to wrench my pistol from the doctor's hand. "You know yourself that they are right."

In vain the captain made signs to him; Grushnitsky did not even look up.

Meanwhile the doctor loaded the pistol and handed it to me.

Seeing this, the captain spat and stamped his foot. "You are a fool, my friend," he said, "a darned fool. Once you trusted me, you should have listened to me in everything. . . . You are getting what you deserve, so go ahead and die like a fly!" He turned away, muttering: "But it is altogether against the rules."

"Grushnitsky!" said I. "There still is time; retract your calumny and I shall forgive you everything. You have failed to make a fool of me, and my vanity is satisfied. Remember that once we were friends. . . ."

His face twisted with passion, his eyes flashed.

"Fire!" he replied. "I despise myself and hate you. If you do not kill me, I shall stab you in the back some night. The world is too small to hold us both. . . ."

I fired.

When the smoke cleared, there was no Grushnitsky on

the ledge. Only a thin pillar of dust curled over the brink of the precipice.

Everybody cried out at once.

"*Finita la comedia!*" I said to the doctor.

He did not reply, but turned away in horror.

I shrugged my shoulders and bowed to Grushnitsky's seconds.

As I came down the path I saw Grushnitsky's blood-stained corpse between the clefts in the rocks. Involuntarily I closed my eyes.

Untying my horse, I set out for home at a walking pace. My heart was heavy within me. The sun seemed to have lost its brilliance and its rays did not warm me.

Before reaching the settlement I turned into a gorge on my right. I could not have endured to see anyone just then; I wanted to be alone. With the reins hanging loose and my head sunk on my breast, I rode on for some time until I found myself in an entirely unfamiliar spot. I turned back and sought the roadway. The sun was setting when I reached Kislovodsk, a spent man on a spent horse.

My manservant told me that Werner had called and gave me two notes, one from him, and the other from Vera.

I opened the first; it contained the following:

"Everything has been arranged as well as possible; the mutilated body has been brought in, and the bullet removed from the breast. Everybody believes that his death was accidental; only the commandant, who probably knows of your quarrel, shook his head, but said nothing. There is no evidence against you and you may rest in peace . . . if you can. Good-bye. . . ."

I hesitated long before opening the second note. What could she have to write to me? An ominous presentiment racked my soul.

Here it is, that letter whose every word ineffaceably seared itself into my memory:

"I am writing to you quite certain that we shall never meet again. When we parted several years ago, I thought the same; but it pleased heaven to try me a second time:

I did not withstand the test, my weak heart was again conquered by that familiar voice . . . but you will not despise me for it, will you? This letter is at once a farewell and a confession: I must tell you everything that has been stored in my heart ever since it first learned to love you. I shall not accuse you—you behaved to me as any other man might have done; you loved me as your property, as a source of the reciprocal joys, fears and sorrows without which life would be wearisome and monotonous. I realised that from the very beginning. . . . But you were unhappy, and I sacrificed myself in the hope that some day you would appreciate my sacrifice, that some day you would understand my infinite tenderness which nothing could affect. Much time has passed since then; I have fathomed all the secrets of your soul . . . and I see that mine was a vain hope. How it hurt me! But my love and my soul have melted into one: the flame is dimmer, but it has not died.

“We are parting forever; yet you may be certain that I shall never love another; my soul has spent all its treasures, its tears and hopes on you. She who has once loved you cannot but regard other men with some measure of contempt, not because you are better than they—oh no!—but because there is something unique in your nature, something peculiar to you alone, something so proud and unfathomable; whatever you may be saying, your voice holds an invincible power; in no one is the desire to be loved so constant as in you; in no one is evil so attractive; in no one’s glance is there such a promise of bliss; nobody knows better than you how to use his advantages, and no one else can be so genuinely unhappy as you, because nobody tries so hard as you to convince himself of the contrary.

“Now I must explain the reason for my hasty departure; it will strike you as of little consequence because it concerns me alone.

“This morning my husband came to me and told me about your quarrel with Grushnitsky. My face must have given me away, for he looked me straight in the eyes long

and searchingly; I nearly fainted at the thought that you would have to fight a duel and that I was the cause; I thought I would lose my mind.... Now, however, when I can reason clearly, I am certain that you will live; it is impossible that you should die without me, impossible! My husband paced the room for a long time; I do not know what he said to me, nor do I remember what I replied.... I probably told him that I loved you.... I only remember that at the end of our conversation he insulted me with a terrible word and left the room. I heard him order the carriage.... For three hours now I have been sitting at the window and awaiting your return.... But you are alive, you cannot die! The carriage is almost ready.... Farewell, farewell! I am lost—but what of it? If I could be certain that you will always remember me—I say nothing of loving me, no—only remember.... Good-bye! Someone is coming.... I have to hide this letter....

“You do not love Mary, do you? You will not marry her? Oh, but you must make this sacrifice for me; I have given up everything in the world for your sake....”

Like a madman I dashed outside, leapt into the saddle of my horse who was being led across the courtyard, and set off at full gallop along the road to Pyatigorsk. I mercilessly spurred on the exhausted beast which, panting and covered with froth, sped me along the rocky road.

The sun had vanished into a black cloud resting on the mountain range in the west, and it turned dark and damp in the gorge. The Podkumok picked its way through the rocks with a dull and monotonous road. Breathless with impatience I galloped on. The thought that I might not find her in Pyatigorsk pounded like a sledge hammer at my heart. Oh, but to see her for a minute, only one more minute, to say good-bye, to clasp her hand.... I prayed, I cursed, I cried, I laughed... no, no words can express my anxiety, my despair. Now that I realised I might lose her forever, Vera became for me the most precious thing

on earth, more precious than life, honour or happiness! God only knows what odd, wild ideas swarmed in my head. . . . And all the while I rode on, spurring my horse mercilessly. Finally I noticed that the animal was breathing more laboriously, and once or twice he stumbled on a level stretch. There still remained five versts to Essentuki, a Cossack hamlet where I could get another mount.

Everything would have been redeemed had my horse had the strength to carry on for another ten minutes. But suddenly, at a sharp bend in the road coming up from a shallow ravine as we were emerging from the hills, he crashed to the ground. I leapt nimbly out of the saddle; but try as I might to get him up, pull as I might at the reins, my efforts were in vain. A scarcely audible groan escaped from between his clenched teeth and a few minutes later he was dead. I was left alone in the steppe, my last hope gone; I tried to continue on foot, but my knees gave way and, exhausted by the day's anxieties and the sleepless night, I fell onto the wet grass and wept like a child.

I lay there for a long time motionless and wept bitterly without trying to check the tears and sobs; I thought my breast would be rent asunder. All my resolution, all my composure vanished like smoke; my spirit was impotent, my reason paralysed, and had someone seen me at that moment he would have turned away in contempt.

When the nocturnal dew and mountain breeze had cooled my fevered brow and my thoughts became collected once more, I realised it was useless and senseless to pursue a happiness that was lost. What more did I want? To see her? Why? Was not everything over between us? One bitter farewell kiss would not make my memories sweeter, and it only would be the harder to part.

It is pleasant for me to know, however, that I can weep! Although, the real reason was perhaps frayed nerves, the sleepless night, the two minutes I had stood looking at the muzzle of a pistol, and an empty stomach.

Everything works out for the best. As for this new sensation of pain, it served as a happy diversion, to employ a military term. It does one good to weep, and had I not ridden my horse to death and then been compelled to walk the fifteen versts back, I perhaps should not have closed my eyes that night either.

I returned to Kislovodsk at five o'clock in the morning, threw myself on the bed and slept like Napoleon after Waterloo.

When I awoke, it was dark outside. Unfastening my jacket, I sat at an open window—and the breeze from the mountains cooled my breast not yet becalmed even by the heavy sleep of fatigue. Far away beyond the river the lights of the fort and the village twinkled through the thick crowns of the overshadowing lindens. The courtyard was deadly still, and the Princess' house plunged into darkness.

The doctor entered. His brow was furrowed, and contrary to his wont he did not offer me his hand.

"Where have you come from, doctor?"

"From Princess Ligovskaya's. Her daughter is ill—nervous breakdown. . . . But that's not why I am here; the trouble is that the authorities are beginning to suspect, and though nothing definite can be proved I would advise you to be more cautious. The Princess just told me that she was aware you fought a duel because of her daughter. That old man—what's his name?—told her. He witnessed your altercation with Grushnitsky in the restaurant. I came to warn you. So good-bye—perhaps we shall not see each other again—very likely you'll be sent away."

He paused on the threshold; he wanted to shake my hand. And had I given him the slightest encouragement he would have flung himself on my neck; but I remained as cold as a stone, and he went away.

That is just like human beings! They are all alike; though fully aware in advance of all the evil aspects of a deed, they aid and abet and even give their approbation to it when they see there is no other way out—and then

they wash their hands of it and turn away with disapproval from him who dared assume the full burden of responsibility. They are all alike, even the kindest and wisest of them!

The following morning, when I had received orders from my superiors to report at the fort of *N.*, I dropped in at the Princess' to say good-bye.

Princess Ligovskaya was taken aback when in reply to her question whether I had anything important to tell her I merely said that I had come to say good-bye.

"I must have a very serious talk with you, however."

I sat down without saying a word.

She was obviously at a loss how to begin; her face turned red and she drummed her pudgy fingers on the table. Finally she began haltingly:

"Monsieur Pechorin, I believe you are an honourable man."

I bowed.

"I am even certain of it," she continued, "though your conduct has been somewhat questionable. You may have your reasons, however, of which I am not aware, and if so, you must share them with me now. You protected my daughter from calumny, engaged in a duel on her behalf, and risked your life in doing so. . . . Pray do not reply, for I know you will not admit it because Grushnitsky is dead." (She crossed herself.) "God forgive him, and you too, I hope! That is none of my concern. . . . I have no right to condemn you, for it was my daughter, blameless though she is, who was the cause. She has told me everything . . . everything, I am sure. You have declared you love her, and she has confessed her love for you." (Here the Princess drew a deep sigh.) "But she is ill and I am certain that it is not an ordinary malady. Some secret grief is killing her; she does not admit it, but I am certain that you are the cause. . . . Listen to me: you perhaps think that I am after rank and immense riches—if so, you are mistaken; I seek only my daughter's happiness. Your present position is unenviable, but it may mend. You are wealthy; my daughter loves you, and her

upbringing is such that she can make her husband happy. I am rich, and she is my only child. . . . Tell me, what is it that deters you? I should not have told you all this, but I rely upon your heart and honour—remember that I have only one daughter . . . only one. . . .”

She began to sob.

“Princess,” I said, “I cannot answer you; allow me to speak to your daughter alone.”

“Never!” she cried, rising from her chair in great agitation.

“As you wish,” replied I, preparing to leave.

She thought it over, motioned me to wait, and left the room.

Some five minutes passed; my heart pounded, but my thoughts were orderly and my head cool. Search as I might in my breast for even the tiniest spark of love for the charming Mary, all my efforts were in vain.

The door opened and she entered. Heavens! How she had changed since I saw her last—and that but a short while ago!

When she reached the middle of the room she swayed; I leapt to her side, offered her my arm and led her to an armchair.

I stood facing her. For a long time neither of us said a word; her big eyes full of ineffable sorrow seemed to search mine with something akin to hope; in vain her pale lips tried to smile; her delicate hands folded on her knees were so fragile and transparent that I began to feel sorry for her.

“Princess,” said I, “you know I have mocked at you, do you not? You must despise me.”

A feverish flush mantled her cheeks.

“Hence, you cannot love me. . . .” I continued.

She turned away, leaned her elbows on the table and covered her eyes with her hand, and I thought I saw tears glistening in them.

“My God!” she said scarcely audibly.

The situation grew unbearable; in another minute I should have thrown myself at her feet.

"So you see for yourself," I said in as steady a voice as I could, forcing a smile, "you see for yourself that I cannot marry you. Even if you wished to do so now, you would regret the decision very soon. The talk I had with your mother compels me to speak with you now so frankly and brutally; I hope she is mistaken but you can easily undeceive her. As you can see I am playing a most contemptible and disgusting role in your eyes, and I admit it; that is the most I can do for you. However bad your opinion may be of me, I shall accept it. You see I am abasing myself before you.... Even if you had loved me, you would despise me from this moment—now, wouldn't you?"

She turned to me a face as pale as marble but with eyes flashing wondrously.

"I hate you. . .," she said.

I thanked her, bowed respectfully and walked out.

An hour later a post troika was carrying me rapidly from Kislovodsk. A few versts from Essentuki I saw the carcase of my steed by the roadside; the saddle had been removed—probably by some passing Cossack—and in its place two ravens now sat. I sighed and turned away....

And now, here in this dreary fort, as my mind dwells on the past, I frequently ask myself: why did I not wish to tread the path fate held open to me with a promise of tranquil joys and peace of mind? No, I could never have reconciled myself to such a lot. I am like a mariner born and bred on board a buccaneer brig whose soul has become so inured to storm and strife that if cast ashore he would weary and languish no matter how alluring the shady groves and how bright the gentle sun. All day long he paces the sandy beach, hearkening to the monotonous roar of the breakers and gazing into the hazy distance to catch in the pale strip dividing the blue deep from the grey clouds the flash of the long-awaited sail that at first is like the wing of a seagull and then gradually stands out from the white of the spray as it steadily makes for its lonely anchorage. . . .

III

THE FATALIST

I happened once to spend two weeks in a Cossack village on the left flank. A battalion of infantry was stationed there, and the officers used to meet at each other's quarters in turn, playing cards in the evenings.

On one occasion at Major S.'s, having tired of boston, we threw the cards under the table and sat on talking until late, for this time the conversation was interesting. We were discussing the Moslem belief that the fate of man is preordained in heaven, which was said to find many adherents among us, Christians, too. Each of us had some unusual occurrences to relate *pro* or *contra*.

"All you have been saying, gentlemen, proves nothing," said the old major. "After all, none of you witnessed any of the strange happenings you adduce to support your views, did you?"

"Of course not," several said. "But we have it on reliable authority!"

"Nonsense!" someone said. "Where is the reliable authority who has seen the scroll on which our mortal hour is written? And if there is such a thing as predestination, why have we been given will and reason? Why are we held accountable for our actions?"

Meanwhile an officer who had been sitting in a corner of the room rose, walked slowly over to the table and surveyed us all with a calm, solemn glance. He was a Serbian by birth, as you could tell by his name.

Lieutenant Vulic's appearance was in keeping with his character. His tall stature and the swarthiness of his complexion, black hair, black, piercing eyes, and the large but regular nose typical of his nation, the cold, melancholy smile that eternally played on his lips—all this was as if designed to endow him with the appearance of an unusual person incapable of sharing his thoughts and emotions with those whom fate had made his comrades.

He was brave, he spoke little but bluntly; he confided

his intimate and family secrets to no one; he scarcely ever drank any wine, and he never paid court to the young Cossack women, whose charms must be seen to be appreciated. It was said nevertheless that the colonel's wife was smitten by his expressive eyes; but he was always angered by hints to that effect.

There was only one passion he did not conceal—his passion for gambling. At a green-topped table he was oblivious to the world. He usually lost, but persistent bad luck only fed his obstinacy. It was said that one night during an expedition when he was keeping the bank on a pillow and having a terrific run of luck, shots suddenly rang out, the alarm was given, and everyone sprang up and rushed for their arms. "Stake the pool!" cried Vulic, who had not moved, to one of the most ardent punters. "Seven!" replied the latter as he dashed off. In spite of the general confusion, Vulic dealt to the end; he turned up punter.

When he reached the skirmish line the firing was already heavy. Vulic paid no attention either to the bullets or the Chechen sabres; he was searching for his lucky punter.

"It was a seven!" Vulic shouted catching sight of him at last in a line of skirmishers who were beginning to dislodge the enemy from a woods, and going up to him pulled out his purse and wallet and gave them to the winner in spite of the latter's objections to this ill-timed settlement. Having performed this unpleasant duty, Vulic dashed forward at the head of the soldiers and with the utmost calm exchanged fire with the Chechens to the very end of the engagement.

When Lieutenant Vulic walked up to the table everybody fell silent, expecting as usual something original.

"Gentlemen!" he said (his voice was calm though it was pitched lower than usual). "Gentlemen, why this idle argument? You wish for proof: I propose we test it on ourselves whether a man can dispose of his own life or whether the fateful moment has been preordained for each of us. . . . Who wants to try?"

"Not I, not I!" was the response from all sides. "What a queer fellow! Of all the things to think of!"

"I suggest a wager," I said in jest.

"What sort of a wager?"

"I maintain there is no such thing as predestination," I said, emptying some twenty gold pieces on the table from my pockets—all that I happened to have on me.

"Done!" replied Vulic in a low voice. "Major, will you be the umpire; here are fifteen gold pieces; you owe me five, so will you do me the favour of making up the difference?"

"Very well," said the major. "Though I haven't the slightest idea what it's all about, or how you propose to settle the matter."

Without a word Vulic went into the major's bedroom, we following him. Going over to a wall hung with weapons, he took down at random one of the pistols, of which there were several of different calibres. We did not realise what he was up to at first; but when he cocked the weapon and primed it, several of us involuntarily cried out and seized him by the arms.

"What are you going to do? Are you mad?" we shouted at him.

"Gentlemen!" he said with deliberation, disengaging his arms. "Which of you would care to pay twenty gold pieces for me?"

Everyone fell silent and drew back.

Vulic went into the next room and sat down at the table; the rest of us followed him. He motioned us to take our seats around the table. We obeyed him in silence, for at this moment he acquired some mysterious power over us. I looked intently into his eyes, but they met my searching gaze calmly and unwaveringly, and his pale lips smiled; but in spite of his composure I thought I could read the seal of death on his pallid face. I have observed, and many old soldiers have confirmed the observation, that frequently the face of a person who is to die in a few hours' time bears some strange mark

of his inevitable fate which a practised eye can scarcely fail to detect.

"You will die today," I said to him. He turned sharply to me, but replied with calm deliberation:

"I may, and then again I may not. . . ."

Then, turning to the major, he asked whether the pistol was loaded. In his confusion, the major could not remember exactly.

"That's enough, Vulic!" someone cried. "It must be loaded once it hung at the head of the bed. What sort of a joke is this!"

"A stupid joke!" threw in another.

"I'll wager fifty to five that the pistol is not loaded!" a third shouted.

Fresh bets were made.

This endless ceremony began to pall on me. "Look here," I said, "either fire or hang the pistol back in its place and let's go to bed."

"That's right," many exclaimed. "Let's go to bed."

"Gentlemen, I beg of you not to move!" said Vulic, pressing the muzzle of the pistol to his forehead. We were all petrified.

"Mr. Pechorin," he went on, "will you take a card and throw it up in the air."

As I recall now, I picked up an ace of hearts from the table and threw it up; we watched with bated breath, our eyes, wide with fear and an undefinable curiosity, shifting back and forth between the pistol and the fateful ace which was now slowly fluttering downwards. The moment it touched the table, Vulic pulled the trigger—but the pistol missed fire.

"Thank God!" several voices cried. "It was not loaded. . . ."

"We shall see about that," said Vulic. Again he cocked the weapon and aimed at a forage cap hanging over the window; a shot rang out and smoke filled the room; and when it dispersed the forage cap was taken down—there was the hole in the very centre of it and the bullet had imbedded itself deep in the wall.

For a good three minutes no one could utter a word; Vulic calmly poured my money into his purse.

Speculation began as to why the pistol did not go off the first time; some claimed that the pan must have been clogged, others whispered that the powder was damp at first, and that Vulic had afterwards sprinkled some fresh powder on it; I, however, assured them that the latter supposition was not just, for I had not taken my eyes off the pistol for a moment.

"You have gambler's luck!" I said to Vulic.

"For the first time in my life," he replied, smiling complacently. "This is better than faro or shtoss."

"But slightly more dangerous."

"Well? Have you begun to believe in predestination?"

"I do believe in it. Only I do not understand why it seemed to me that you were doomed to die today...."

The very same man who so short a time before had with supreme indifference aimed a pistol at his own forehead now suddenly flared up and looked disconcerted.

"That will do!" he said, rising. "Our wager is finished and now your remarks seem out of place to me...." He picked up his cap and walked out. His behaviour struck me as queer—and rightly so.

Soon everyone left, each giving his own interpretation of Vulic's eccentric behaviour on the way home, and, probably, unanimously branding me an egoist for having wagered with a man who wanted to shoot himself; as if he could not have found a convenient opportunity without my help!

I returned home through the deserted sidestreets of the settlement; the full moon, red as the lurid glow of a fire, was just coming up over the jagged skyline of the housetops; the stars shone placidly in the dark-blue firmament; and I was amused at the thought that there once were sages who believed the heavenly bodies have a share in our wretched squabbles over a bit of territory or some other imaginary rights. Yet these lamps, which they thought had been lighted only to illuminate their battles and triumphs, still burn with undiminished brilliance,

while their passions and hopes have long since died out together with them like a campfire left burning on the fringe of a forest by a careless wayfarer. But what strength of will they drew from the certainty that all the heavens with their numberless inhabitants looked down on them with constant though mute sympathy! Whereas we, their wretched descendants, who roam the earth without convictions or pride, without joys or fear other than the nameless dread that constricts the heart at the thought of the inevitable end, we are no longer capable of great sacrifices either for the good of mankind or even for our personal happiness since we know that happiness is impossible; and we pass indifferently from one doubt to another just as our forebears floundered from one delusion to another, without the hopes they had and without even that vague but potent sense of joy the soul derives from any struggle with man or destiny. . . .

Many similar thoughts passed through my mind; I did not retard their passage, because I do not care to dwell upon abstract ideas—for what can they lead to? In my early youth I was a dreamer; I liked to woo the images, now gloomy, now radiant, which my restless, eager imagination drew for me. But what have I derived from it all? Only weariness, like the aftermath of a nocturnal battle with a phantom, and dim memories filled with regrets. In this futile struggle I exhausted the fervour of spirit and the constancy of will which are essential to real life; when I embarked on that life, I had already lived it in my mind, and hence it has become as boring and repulsive to me as a poor imitation of a long-familiar book.

The evening's events had made a rather deep impression on me and worked on my nerves. I am not certain whether I now believe in predestination or not, but that night I firmly believed in it. The proof had been striking, and regardless of the fact that I had ridiculed our forebears and their complaisant astrology, I found myself thinking as they did; but I caught myself in time on this dangerous road, and having made it a rule never to reject

anything categorically and never to believe in anything blindly, I cast metaphysics aside and began to watch the ground under my feet. The caution was timely, for I nearly stumbled over something thick and soft but apparently inanimate. I bent down—the moon now lit up the road—and what did I see lying in front of me but a pig sliced into two with a sabre. . . . I had hardly had time to look at it when I heard footsteps: two Cossacks came running from a sidestreet. One of them came up to me and asked whether I had seen a drunken Cossack pursuing a pig. I told them that I had not met the Cossack, but showed them the unlucky victim of his violent prowess.

"The bandit!" said the second Cossack. "As soon as he drinks his fill of *chikhir** he's out to cut up everything that comes his way. Let's go after him, Yeremeich; we've got to tie him up, or else. . . ."

They went off and I continued on my way more warily than before, at last reaching my quarters safe and sound.

I was staying with an old Cossack non-commissioned officer whom I liked because of his kindly nature and particularly because of his pretty daughter, Nastya.

She was waiting for me as usual at the gate, wrapped in a fur coat; the moon shone on her sweet lips now blue from the cold of the night. Seeing me, she smiled, but I had other things on my mind. "Good night, Nastya," I said, passing by. She was about to say something in reply, but sighed instead.

I locked the door of my room, lighted a candle and flung myself on the bed; tonight, however, sleep eluded me longer than usual. The east was already beginning to grow pale when I fell asleep, but evidently the heavens had ordained that I was not to sleep this night. At four o'clock in the morning two fists banged at my window. I sprang up; what was the matter? "Wake up and get dressed!" several voices shouted. I dressed hastily and went out. "Do you know what's happened?" the three

* A young wine.—Ed.

officers who had come for me said to me in chorus; they were as pale as death.

"What?"

"Vulic has been killed."

I was stupefied.

"Yes, killed!" they went on. "Let us go quickly."

"Where to?"

"We'll tell you on the way."

We set off. They told me everything that had happened, adding to the story various observations concerning the strange fatality that had saved Vulic from certain death half an hour before he died. The Serbian had been walking alone along a dark street when the drunken Cossack who had slashed up the pig bumped into him, and might perhaps have gone on without paying any attention to him had Vulic not stopped suddenly and said:

"Whom are you looking for, brother?"

"*You!*" the Cossack answered, striking him with his sabre and cleaving him from the shoulder nearly to the heart. . . . The two Cossacks whom I had seen and who were pursuing the murderer reached the spot, and picked up the wounded man, but he was already breathing his last and uttered only the words: "He was right!" I alone understood the ominous portent of these words; they referred to me. I had involuntarily predicted the poor man's fate; my instinct had not failed me; I had indeed read on his altered features the stamp of imminent death.

The murderer had locked himself in a vacant cottage at the far end of the settlement, and thither we went. A large number of women were running in the same direction, crying as they went. Every now and then a Cossack sprang belatedly out of a cottage hurriedly buckling on a dagger and ran past us. There was a fearful commotion.

At last we arrived on the scene to find a crowd gathered around the cottage whose doors and shutters had been fastened from the inside. Officers and Cossacks were holding a heated argument; the women were wailing and lamenting. Among them I noticed an old woman whose

face expressed frantic despair. She was seated on a thick log, her elbows on her knees and her hands supporting her head; she was the murderer's mother. At times her lips moved . . . was it with a prayer or a curse?

In the meantime some decision had to be made and the malefactor apprehended. But no one was anxious to go in first.

I went up to the window and looked in through a crack in a shutter. The man lay on the floor, holding a pistol in his right hand; a blood-stained sabre lay beside him. His face was pale, and his expressive eyes rolled fearfully; at times he shuddered and clutched at his head as if hazily recollecting the happenings of the previous day. There did not seem to be much resolution in his uneasy glance and I told the major that there was no reason why he should not order the Cossacks to break the door in and rush the cottage, for it would be better to do so now rather than later when the man would have fully recovered his senses.

Just then an old captain of the Cossacks went up to the door and called to the man inside by name; the latter responded.

"You've sinned, brother Yefimych," said the Cossack captain. "So there's nothing for it but to give yourself up!"

"I won't!" replied the Cossack.

"Fear God's wrath! You are not a heathen Chechen, you're an honest Christian. You've gone astray and it can't be helped. You can't escape your fate!"

"I won't give up!" the Cossack shouted menacingly, and we could hear the click of the pistol as he cocked it.

"Hey, mother!" the Cossack captain said to the old woman. "You speak to your son, maybe he will listen to you. . . . After all, this sort of thing is only defying God. Look, the gentlemen have been waiting for two hours now."

The old woman looked at him intently and shook her head.

"Vasili Petrovich," said the Cossack captain, walking

up to the major, "he will not give himself up—I know him. And if we break in the door, he will kill many of our men. Wouldn't it be better if you ordered him to be shot? There is a wide crack in the shutter."

At that moment a queer thought flashed in my mind; like Vulic, I thought of putting fate to a test.

"Wait," I said to the major, "I'll take him alive." Telling the Cossack captain to engage him in conversation and stationing three Cossacks at the entrance with instructions to break in the door and to rush to my assistance as soon as the signal was given, I walked around the cottage and approached the fateful window, my heart pounding.

"Hey there, you wretch!" shouted the Cossack captain. "Are you mocking at us or what? Or maybe you think we won't be able to take you?" He began hammering at the door with all his strength, while I, pressing my eye to the chink, followed the movements of the Cossack inside who did not expect attack from this side, then suddenly wrenched off the shutter and threw myself into the window head first. The pistol went off next to my ear and the bullet tore off an epaulette. The smoke that filled the room, however, prevented my adversary from finding his sabre, which lay beside him. I seized him by the arms; the Cossacks broke in, and in less than three minutes the criminal was tied up and led off under guard. The people dispersed and the officers congratulated me—and indeed they had reason to do so.

After all this, one might think, how could one help becoming a fatalist? But who knows for certain whether he is convinced of anything or not? And how often we mistake a deception of the senses or an error of reason for conviction!

I prefer to doubt everything; such a disposition does not preclude a resolute character; on the contrary, as far as I am concerned, I always advance more boldly when I do not know what is awaiting me. After all, nothing worse than death can happen—and death you cannot escape!

On returning to the fort I told Maxim Maximych everything I had seen and experienced, and wanted to hear his opinion about predestination. At first he did not understand the word, but I explained it to him as best I could, whereupon he said, significantly shaking his head:

"Yes, sir! It's a queer business that! By the way, these Asiatic pistol cocks often miss fire if they are poorly oiled or if you don't press hard enough with your finger. I must admit I don't like the Cherkess rifles either; they are a bit inconvenient for the likes of us; the butt is so small that unless you watch out you may get your nose scorched. . . . Their sabres now are a different matter—I take off my hat to them!"

Then he added after brief reflection:

"Yes, I'm sorry for the poor chap. . . . Why the devil did he stop to talk with a drunk at night! But, I suppose, that was his destiny!"

I got nothing more out of him; in general he does not care for metaphysical discourses.

THE END

1837-1839

REQUEST TO READERS

Progress Publishers would be glad to have your opinion of this book, its translation and design and any suggestions you may have for future publications.

Please send all your comments to 17, Zubovsky Boulevard, Moscow, USSR.

Printed in the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics

Художественный редактор *В. Я. Пушкарева*
Технический редактор *В. Д. Крылова*

Подписано в печать 28.07.1978 г. Формат 84 × 108 / 32. Бумага офсетная
Гарнитура баскервиль. Печать офсетная. Условн. печ. л. 18,9
Уч.-изд. л. 17,37. Тираж 29 000 экз. Заказ № 864. Цена 2 руб. 40 коп.
Изд. № 25343

Издательство «Прогресс»
Государственного комитета СССР
по делам издательств, полиграфии и книжной торговли
Москва 119021, Зубовский бульвар, 17

Ордена Трудового Красного Знамени Калининский полиграфический
комбинат Союзполиграфпрома при Государственном комитете СССР
по делам издательств, полиграфии и книжной торговли, г. Калинин,
пр. Ленина, 5.

Цена 2 р. 40 к.



In 1973 Progress Publishers commenced publication of the **Russian Classics Series**. This series will offer the reader English translations of novels by such famous writers as Turgenev, Dostoyevsky, and Tolstoy, the poetry of Pushkin and Lermontov, the biting satire of Gogol and Saltykov-Shchedrin, and the brilliant short stories of Chekhov, Leskov and Korolenko. It will also include anthologies of Russian poetry from the eighteenth to the twentieth century and collection of stories and plays by other great Russian poets and writers of the nineteenth century. The books will contain illustrations by famous artists of the past and present. Each volume will be provided with an introductory article.

The following books will appear in 1978-1979:

- I. BUNIN • **STORIES AND POEMS**
- A. CHEKHOV • **SELECTED WORKS IN TWO VOLUMES**
- A. HERZEN • **WHO IS TO BLAME?**
- L. TOLSTOY • **ANNA KARENINA (Novel in Two Books)**
- I. TURGENEV • **A HUNTER'S SKETCHES**